CAMBRIDGE ENGLISH CLASSICS

HINC LUCEM ET POCULA SACRA

LIBRARY OF THE
Massachusetts
Bible Society

Catalog No. A·833·3/B 1909$_5$
Family INDO·EUROPEAN
Sub-Family TEUTONIC
Branch WEST
Group LOW INSULAR
Language ENGLISH
Dialect
~~Locality~~ "The Authorised Version of
Contents the English Bible, first
Version issue 1611" — reprinted
~~Translator~~ Editor W. A. Wright
Published by CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY
Place ENGLAND
Date 1909
Accession No. 2.253
Accession Date Sept. 20, 1940
Price afs/12.50 per set of 5 vols.
VOLUME FIVE

THE ENGLISH BIBLE

In five volumes

VOLUME V

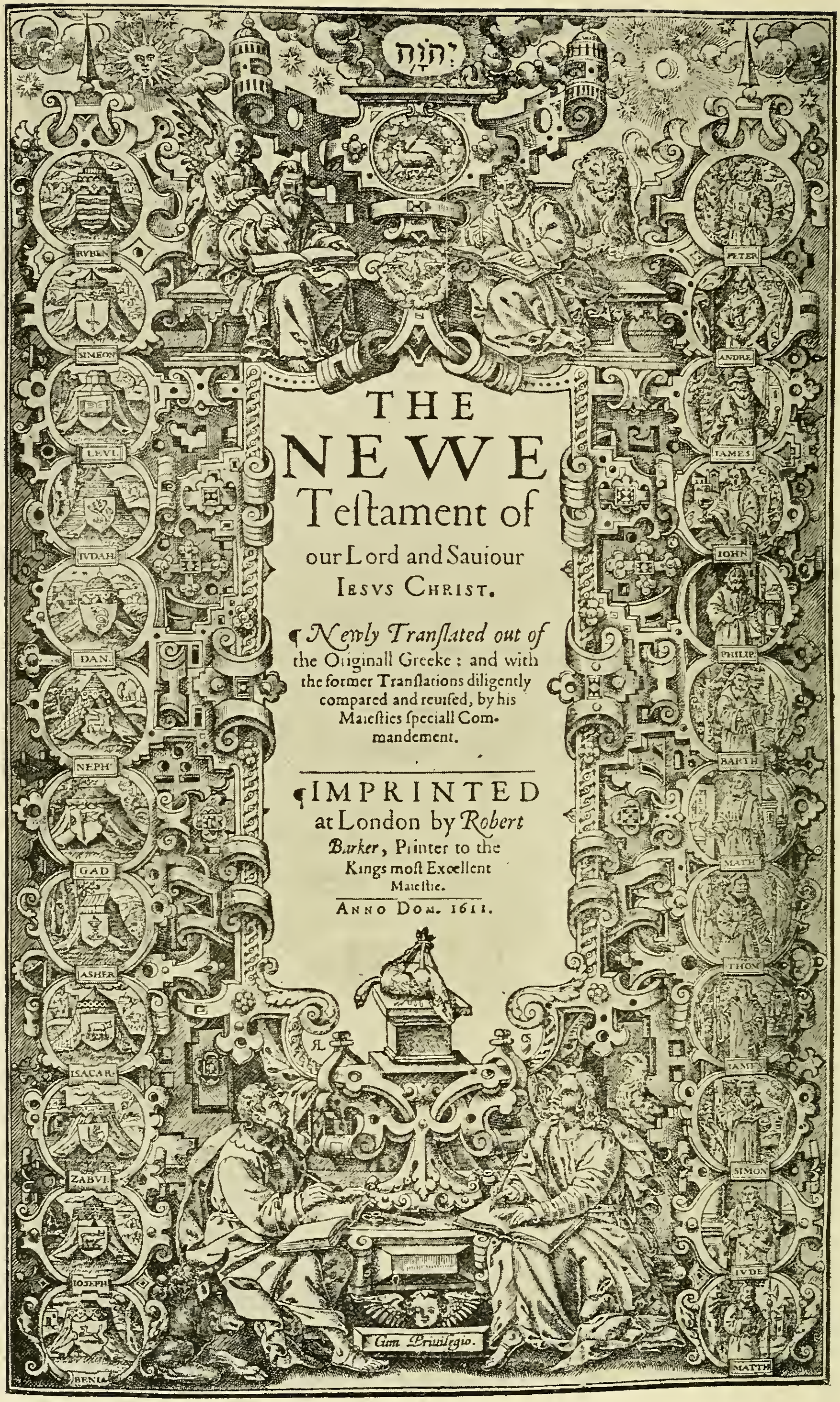
THE NEW TESTAMENT

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE,
C. F. CLAY, MANAGER.
London: FETTER LANE, E.C.
Edinburgh: 100, PRINCES STREET.

Berlin: A. ASHER AND CO.
Leipzig: F. A. BROCKHAUS.
New York: G. P. PUTNAM'S SONS.
Bombay and Calcutta: MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD.

[*All rights reserved*]

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN



THE
NEWE
Teſtament of
our Lord and Sauiour
IESVS CHRIST.

¶ *Newly Tranſlated out of*
the Originall Greeke: and with
the former Tranſlations diligently
compared and reuiſed, by his
Maieſties ſpeciall Com-
mandement.

¶ IMPRINTED
at London by *Robert*
Barker, Printer to the
Kings moſt Excellent
Maieſtie.

ANNO DOM. 1611.

Cum Priuilegio.

יְהוָה
RVBEN
SIMEON
LEVI
IVDAH
DAN
NEPH
GAD
ASHER
ISACAR
ZABVL
IOSEPH
BENIA
PETER
ANDRE
IAMES
IOHN
PHILIP
BARTH
MATH
THOM
IAMES
SIMON
IVDE
MATTH

THE
AUTHORISED VERSION
OF THE
ENGLISH BIBLE
1611

EDITED BY

WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.
VICE-MASTER OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

VOLUME V

Cambridge
at the University Press
1909

Cambridge:
PRINTED BY JOHN CLAY, M.A.
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN

VOLUME V

THE NEW TESTAMENT

3 V A 2

THE GOSPEL
to

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Ioseph. 18 Hee was conceiued by the holy Ghost, and borne of the Virgin Mary when she was espoused to Ioseph. 19 The Angel satisfieth the misdeeming thoughts of Ioseph, and interpreteth the names of Christ.

*Luke 3. 23. THE booke of the *generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham.

*Gen. 21. 3. *Gene. 25. 26. *Gen. 29. 35. 2 *Abraham begate Isaac, and *Isaac begate Iacob, and *Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren.

*Gen. 38. 27. *1. Chro. 2. 5. 3 And *Iudas begate Phares and Zara of Thamar, and *Phares begate Esrom, and Esrom begate Aram.

ruth. 4. 18. 4 And Aram begate Aminadab, and Aminadab begate Naasson, and Naasson begate Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Boos of Rachab, and Boos begate Obed of Ruth, and Obed begate Iesse.

*1. Sam. 16. 1. and 17. 12. *2. Sam. 12. 24. 6 And *Iesse begate Dauid the King, & *Dauid the King begat Solomon of her *that had bin* the wife of Vrias.

*1. Chro. 3. 10. 7 And *Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begate Abia, and Abia begate Asa.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat, and Iosaphat begate Ioram, and Ioram begate Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Ioatham, and Ioatham begate Achas, and Achas begate Ezekias.

*2. King. 20. 21. 1. chro. 3. 13. 10 And *Ezekias begate Manasses,

ACCORDING

S. Matthew.

and Manasses begate Amon, and Amon begate Iosias.

11 And ||Iosias begate Iechonias and his brethren, about the time they were caried away to Babylon.

|| Some read, Iosias begate Iakim, and Iakim begat Iechonias.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, *Iechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

* 1. Chro. 3. 16, 17.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begate Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, & Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar, and Eleazar begate Matthan, and Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne Iesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations: and from Dauid vntill the carying away into Babylon, are foureteene generations: and from the carying away into Babylon vnto Christ, are fourteene generations.

18 ¶ Now the *birth of Iesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Ioseph (before they came together) shee was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

*Luke 1. 27.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to make her a publique example, was minded to put her away priuily.

20 But while hee thought on these things, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph thou sonne of Dauid, feare not to take vnto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

*Luke 1. 31. 21 And she shall bring forth a sonne, *and thou shalt call his Name Iesus: for hee shall saue his people from their sinnes.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

*Esai. 7. 14. || *Or, his name shall be called.* 23 *Behold, a Virgin shall be with childe, and shall bring foorth a sonne, and ||they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with vs.)

24 Then Ioseph, being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, & tooke vnto him his wife:

25 And knewe her not, till shee had brought forth her first borne sonne, and he called his name Iesus.

CHAP. II.

1 The Wise men out of the East, are directed to Christ by a Starre. 11 They worship him, and offer their presents. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt, with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children: 20 Himselfe dyeth. 23 Christ is brought backe againe into Galilee to Nazareth.

*Luk. 2. 6. NOw when *Iesus was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came Wise men from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is borne King of the Iewes? for we haue seene his Starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chiefe Priests and Scribes of the people together, hee demanded of them where Christ should be borne.

5 And they said vnto him, In Bethlehem of Iudea: For thus it is written by the Prophet;

*Mic. 5. 2. iohn 7. 41. || *Or, feede.* 6 *And thou Bethlehem *in* the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come a Gouernour, that shall ||rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod, when he had priuily called the Wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the Starre appeared:

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Goe, and search diligently for the yong child, and when ye haue found

him, bring me word againe, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the King, they departed, and loe, the Starre which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came and stood ouer where the young childe was.

10 When they saw the Starre, they reioyced with exceeding great ioy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the yong child with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they ‖presented vnto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe. ‖ *Or, offered.*

12 And being warned of God in a dreame, that they should not returne to Herode, they departed into their owne countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise and take the young childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee thou there vntill I bring thee word: for Herode will seeke the young childe, to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he tooke the yong childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there vntill the death of Herode, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, *Out of Egypt haue I called my sonne. *Ose. 11. 1.

16 ¶ Then Herode, when hee saw that hee was mocked of the Wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent foorth, and slewe all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeeres olde and vnder, according to the time, which he had diligently enquired of the Wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by *Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *Ier. 31. 15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herode was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the yong childe and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the yong childes life.

21 And he arose, and tooke the yong childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in the roome of his father Herod, hee was afraid to goe thither: notwithstanding, beeing warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And hee came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shalbe called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 Iohn preacheth: his office: life, and Baptisme. 7 He reprehendeth the Pharises, 13 and baptizeth Christ in Iordane.

*Marke 1. 4. luke 3. 2.

IN those daies came *Iohn the Baptist, preaching in the wildernesse of Iudea,

2 And saying, Repent yee: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

*Esay 40. 3. marke 1. 3.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the Prophet Esaias, saying, *The voyce of one crying in the wildernes, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same Iohn had his raiment of camels haire, and a leatherne girdle about his loynes, and his meate was locusts and wilde hony.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem, and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordane,

6 And were baptized of him in Iordane, confessing their sinnes.

*1. Cha. 12. 34.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his Baptisme, he said vnto them, *O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

|| *Or, answerable to amendment of life.*

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ||meet for repentance.

*Iohn 18. 39.

9 And thinke not to say within your selues, *Wee haue Abraham to *our* father: For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

*Chap. 7. 19.

10 And now also the axe is layd vnto the root of the trees: *Therefore euery tree which bringeth not foorth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

*Mark. 1. 8. iohn 1. 26. luke 3. 16.

11 I indeed baptize you with water vnto repentance: but he that commeth after mee, is mightier then I, whose shooes I am not worthy to beare, hee

shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but wil burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ *Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Iordane, vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him: *Mark. 1. 9. luke 3. 21.

14 But Iohn forbade him, saying, I haue need to bee baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Iesus, when hee was baptized, went vp straightway out of the water: and loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voice from heauen, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ fasteth, and is tempted. 11 The Angels minister vnto him. 13 Hee dwelleth in Capernaum, 17 beginneth to preach, 18 calleth Peter, and Andrew, 21 Iames, and Iohn: 23 and healeth all the diseased.

THen was *Iesus led vp of the Spirit into the wildernesse, to bee tempted of the deuill. *Marke 1. 12. luke 4. 1.

2 And when hee had fasted forty dayes and forty nights, hee was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, hee said, If thou be the sonne of God, command that these stones bee made bread.

4 But he answered, and said, It is written, *Man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut. 8. 3.

5 Then the deuill taketh him vp into the holy Citie, and setteth him on a pinacle of the Temple,

6 And saith vnto him, If thou bee the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: For it is written, *He shall giue his Angels charge concerning thee, & in their handes they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal. 91. 11.

A 3 7 Iesus

*Deu. 6. 16

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Againe the Deuill taketh him vp into an exceeding high mountaine, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And saith vnto him, All these things will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

*Deu. 6. 13 and 10. 20.

10 Then saith Iesus vnto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

11 Then the deuill leaueth him, and behold, Angels came and ministred vnto him.

*Mar. 1. 14. luke 4. 14. iohn 4. 43.
|| Or, *deliuered vp.*

12 ¶ *Now when Iesus had heard that Iohn was ||cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

13 And leauing Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is vpon the Sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthali:

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

*Esai. 9. 1.

15 *The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the Sea beyond Iordane, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darkenesse, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung vp.

*Mar. 1. 14

17 ¶ *From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

*Mar. 1. 16.

18 ¶ *And Iesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers)

19 And he saith vnto them, Follow mee: and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, hee sawe other two brethren, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediatly left the shippe and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues,

and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing all maner of sickenesse, and all maner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went thorowout all Syria: and they brought vnto him all sicke people that were taken with diuerse diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunaticke, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Hierusalem, and from Iudea, and from beyond Iordane.

CHAP. V.

Christ beginneth his Sermon in the Mount: 3 declaring who are blessed, 13 who are the salt of the earth, 14 the light of the world, the citie on an hill, 15 the candle: 17 that he came to fulfill the Law: 21 what it is to kill, 27 to commit adulterie, 33 to sweare: 38 Exhorteth to suffer wrong, 44 to loue euen our enemies, 38 and to labour after perfectnesse.

ANd seeing the multitudes, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 *Blessed *are* the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *Luk. 6. 20.

4 Blessed *are* they that mourne: for they shall be comforted.

5 *Blessed *are* the meeke: for they shall inherit the earth. *Psa. 37. 11

6 Blessed *are* they which doe hunger and thirst after righteousnesse: *for they shall be filled. *Esa. 65. 13

7 Blessed *are* the mercifull: for they shall obtaine mercie.

8 *Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. *Psal. 24. 4.

9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall bee called the children of God.

10 *Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *1. Pet. 3. 14

11 Blessed *are* ye, when men shall reuile you, and persecute you, and shal say all manner of *euill against you †falsly for my sake. *1. Pet. 4. 14. †*Gr. lying.*

12 Reioyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heauen: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

*Marke 9. 50. luke. 14 34.

13 ¶ Yee are the salt of the earth: *But if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it bee salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden vnder foote of men.

14 Yee are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.

|| *The word in the originall, signifieth a measure containing about a pint lesse then a pecke.*

*Marke 4. 21. luke 8. 16. and 11. 33.

*1. Pet. 2. 12.

*Luke 16. 17.

*Iames 2. 10.

15 Neither doe men ||light a candle, and put it vnder a *bushell: but on a candlesticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, *that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your father which is in heauen.

17 ¶ Thinke not that I am come to destroy the lawe or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verily I say vnto you, *Till heauen and earth passe, one iote or one title, shall in no wise passe from the law, till all be fulfilled.

19 *Whosoeuer therfore shall breake one of these least commaundements, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall doe, and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen.

20 For I say vnto you, That except your righteousnesse shall exceede the righteousnesse of the Scribes and Pharisees, yee shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heauen.

|| *Or, to them*

*Exod. 20. 13. deut. 5. 17.

21 ¶ Yee haue heard, that it was saide ||by them of old time, *Thou shalt not kill: and, Whosoeuer shall kill, shalbe in danger of the iudgement.

22 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the Iudgement: and whosoeuer shall say to his brother, Racha, shal be in danger of the counsell: but whosoeuer shall say, *Thou* foole, shalbe in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee:

24 Leaue there thy gift before the altar, and goe thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

*Luke 12. 58.

25 *Agree with thine aduersarie

quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: least at any time the aduersarie deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say vnto thee, thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast payd the vttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was said by them of old time, *Thou shalt not commit adulterie.

* Exod. 20. 14.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie with her already in his heart.

29 *And if thy right eie ||offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee. For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

*Chap. 18. 8. marke 9. 47.

|| *Or, doe cause thee to offend.*

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee. For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31 It hath beene said, *Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him giue her a writing of diuorcement.

*Deut. 24. 1. luke 16. 18. 1. cor. 7. 10.

32 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall put away his wife, sauing for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoeuer shall marie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie.

33 ¶ Againe, yee haue heard that it hath beene said by them of old time, *Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe vnto the Lord thine othes.

*Exod. 20. 7. leuit. 19. 12. deut. 5. 11.

34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstoole: neither by Hierusalem, for it is the citie of the great king.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thy head, because thou canst not make one haire white or blacke.

37 *But let your communication bee Yea, yea: Nay, nay: For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill.

*Iam. 5. 12.

38 ¶ Yee haue heard that it hath beene said, *An eie for an eie, and a tooth for a tooth.

*Exod. 21. 24. leuit. 24 20. deut. 19 21.

39 But I say vnto you, *that yee resist not euill: but whosoeuer shall smite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him the other also.

*Luke 6. 29. rom. 12. 17. 1. cor. 6. 7.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloake also.

41 And whosoeuer shall compell thee to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

*Deut. 15. 8. 42 Giue to him that asketh thee: and *from him that would borrow of thee, turne not thou away.

*Leuit. 19. 18. 43 ¶ Yee haue heard, that it hath beene said, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie:

*Luke 6. 27. *Luke 23. 34. acts 7. 60. 44 But I say vnto you, *Loue your enemies, blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, and *pray for them which despitefully vse you, and persecute you:

45 That yee may be the children of your father which is in heauen: for he maketh his sunne to rise on the euill and on the good, and sendeth raine on the iust, and on the vniust.

*Luke 6. 32. 46 *For if yee loue them which loue you, what reward haue yee? Doe not euen the Publicanes the same?

47 And if yee salute your brethren only, what do you more *then others?* Doe not euen the Publicanes so?

48 Be yee therefore perfect, euen as your father, which is in heauen, is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ continueth his Sermon in the Mount, speaking of almes, 5 prayer, 14 forgiuing our brethren, 16 fasting, 19 where our treasure is to be layed vp, 24 of seruing God, and Mammon, 25 Exhorteth not to bee carefull for worldly things: 33 but to seeke Gods kingdome.

|| *Or, with.* TAke heed that yee doe not your almes before men, to bee seene of them: otherwise yee haue no reward ||of your father which is in heauen.

*Rom. 12. 8 || *Or, cause not a trumpet to be sounded.* 2 Therefore, *when thou doest thine almes, ||doe not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites doe, in the Synagogues, and in the streetes, that they may haue glory of men. Verily, I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know, what thy right doeth:

4 That thine almes may be in secret: And thy father which seeth in secret, himselfe shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for

they loue to pray standing in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seene of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy father which is in secret, and thy father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when yee pray, vse not vaine *repetitions, as the heathen doe. For they thinke that they shall be heard for their much speaking. *Ecclus. 7. 16.

8 Be not yee therefore like vnto them: For your father knoweth what things yee haue neede of, before yee aske him.

9 After this maner therefore pray yee: *Our father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy name. *Luke 11. 2

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done, in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our daily bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debts, as we forgiue our debters.

13 And lead vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill: For thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for euer, Amen.

14 *For, if yee forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly father will also forgiue you. *Marke 11. 25.

15 But, if yee forgiue not men their trespasses, neither will your father forgiue your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreouer, when yee fast, be not as the Hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appeare vnto men to fast: Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face:

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy father which is in secret: and thy father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp for your selues treasures vpon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where theeues breake thorow, and steale.

20 *But lay vp for your selues treasures in heauen, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, & where theeues doe not breake thorow, nor steale. *Luke 12. 33. 1. tim. 6 19.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

22 *The light of the body is the eye: *Luke 11. 34.

If therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe full of light.

23 But if thine eye be euill, thy whole body shall be full of darknesse. If therfore the light that is in thee be darkenesse, how great is that darkenesse?

*Luke 16. 13. 24 ¶ *No man can serue two masters: for either he will hate the one and loue the other, or else hee will holde to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and Mammon.

*Luke 12. 22. psal. 55. 22. 1. pet. 5. 7. 25 Therfore I say vnto you, *Take no thought for your life, what yee shall eate, or what ye shall drinke, nor yet for your body, what yee shall put on: Is not the life more then meate? and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the foules of the aire: for they sow not, neither do they reape, nor gather into barnes, yet your heauenly father feedeth them. Are yee not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought, can adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lillies of the field, how they grow: they toile not, neither doe they spinne.

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the ouen: shall he not much more clothe you, O yee of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or, what shall we drinke? or wherewithall shall wee be clothed?

32 (For after all these things doe the Gentiles seeke:) for your heauenly father knoweth that ye haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shalbe added vnto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it selfe: sufficient vnto the day is the euill thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ ending his Sermon in the Mount, reprooueth rash iudgement, 6 Forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogges, 7 Exhorteth to prayer, 13 To enter in at the strait gate, 15 To beware of false prophets, 21 Not to be hearers, but doers of the word: 24 like

houses builded on a rocke, 26 And not on the sand.

IVdge *not, that ye be not iudged. *Luk. 6.
2 For with what iudgment ye iudge, yee shall be iudged: 37.
*and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to rom. 2. 1.
you againe. *Mar. 4. 24.
3 *And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers luke 6. 38.
eye, but considerest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? *Luk. 6. 41.
4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let mee pull out
the mote out of thine eye, and beholde, a beame is in thine
owne eye?
5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beame out of thine
owne eye: and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the
mote out of thy brothers eye.
6 ¶ Giue not that which is holy vnto the dogs, neither cast
ye your pearles before swine: lest they trample them vnder
their feete, and turne againe and rent you.
7 ¶ *Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shall *Chap. 21.
finde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you. 22. marke
8 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, 11. 24. luke 11. 9.
findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened. iohn 16.
9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne aske 24. iam. 1. 6.
bread, will hee giue him a stone?
10 Or if he aske a fish, will hee giue him a serpent?
11 If ye then being euill, know how to giue good giftes
vnto your children, how much more shall your Father which
is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?
12 Therefore all things *whatsoeuer ye would that men *Luk. 6.
should doe to you, doe ye euen so to them: for this is the 31.
Law and the Prophets.
13 ¶ *Enter ye in at the strait gate, for wide is the gate, *Luk. 13.
and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many 24.
there be which goe in thereat:
14 ||Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which || *Or, how.*
leadeth vnto life, and few there be that finde it.
15 ¶ Beware of false prophets which come to you in sheepes
clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.
16 Yee shall knowe them by their fruits: *Doe men gather *Luk. 6.
grapes of thornes, or figges of thistles? 43.

17 Euen so, euery good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth euil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

*Cha. 3. 10

19 *Euery tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

*Rom. 2. 13
iam. 1. 22.

21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto me, *Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heauen: but he that doth the will of my father which is in heauen.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue we not prophecied in thy name? and in thy name haue cast out deuils? and in thy name done many wonderfull works?

*Luk. 13. 27
Psal. 6. 8.

23 And then wil I professe vnto them, *I neuer knew you: *Depart from me, ye that worke iniquity.

*Luk. 6. 47.

24 ¶ Therefore, *whosoeuer heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I wil liken him vnto a wise man, which built his house vpon a rocke:

25 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded vpon a rocke.

26 And euery one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall bee likened vnto a foolish man, which built his house vpon the sand:

27 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

*Mar. 1. 22
luke 4. 32.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these sayings, *the people were astonished at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

2 Christ clenseth the leper, 5 healeth the Centurions seruant, 14 Peters mother in lawe, 16 and many other diseased: 18 Sheweth how he is to be followed: 23 stilleth the tempest on the Sea, 28 driueth the deuils out of two men possessed, 31 and suffereth them to goe into the swine.

WHen he was come downe from the Mountaine, great multitudes folowed him.

*Mar. 1. 40.
luke 5. 12.

2 *And behold, there came a leper, and worshipped him, say-

ing, Lord, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

3 And Iesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane. And immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Iesus saith vnto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy selfe to the priest, and offer the gift that *Moses commanded, for a testimonie vnto them. *Leui. 14. 4.

5 ¶ *And when Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him, *Luke 7. 1.

6 And saying, Lord, my seruant lieth at home sicke of the palsie, grieuously tormented.

7 And Iesus saith vnto him, I will come, and heale him.

8 The Centurion answered, and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word onely, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man vnder authority, hauing souldiers vnder me: and I say to this man, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doth it.

10 When Iesus heard it, he marueiled, and said to them that followed, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shal sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, & Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen:

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darkenesse: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeued, so be it done vnto thee. And his seruant was healed in the self same houre.

14 ¶ *And when Iesus was come into Peters house, hee saw his wiues mother laid, and sicke of a feuer: *Mar. 1. 29 luke 4. 38.

15 And he touched her hand, and the feuer left her: and she arose, and ministred vnto them.

16 ¶ *When the Euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and hee cast out the spirits with his worde, and healed all that were sicke, *Mar. 1. 32. luke 4. 40.

17 That it might be fulfilled which which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, *Himselfe tooke our infirmities, *Esai. 53. 4. 1. pet. 2. 24.

mities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 ¶ Now when Iesus saw great multitudes about him, hee gaue commaundement to depart vnto the other side.

*Luke 9. 57.

19 *And a certaine Scribe came, and said vnto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoeuer thou goest.

20 And Iesus saith vnto him, The Foxes haue holes, and the birds of the ayre haue nests: but the sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his Disciples said vnto him, Lord, suffer me first to goe, and bury my father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow me, & let the dead, bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his Disciples followed him.

*Marke. 4. 37. luke 8. 23.

24 *And behold, there arose a great tempest in the Sea, insomuch that the ship was couered with the waues: but he was asleepe.

25 And his Disciples came to him, and awoke, saying, Lord, saue vs: we perish.

26 And he saith vnto them, Why are yee fearefull, O yee of litle faith? Then hee arose, and rebuked the winds and the Sea, and there was a great calme.

27 But the men marueiled, saying, What maner of man is this, that euen the winds and the Sea obey him?

*Marke 5. 1. luk. 8. 26.

28 ¶ *And when hee was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, comming out of the tombes, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, What haue we to doe with thee, Iesus thou sonne of God? Art thou come hither to torment vs befor yͤ time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, an heard of many swine, feeding.

31 So the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Goe. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ranne violently downe a steepe place into the Sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them, fled, and went their waies into the citie, and told euery thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the deuils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meete Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that hee would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 Christ curing one sicke of the palsey, 9 calleth Matthew from the receite of custome, 10 eateth with Publicanes, and sinners, 14 defendeth his Disciples for not fasting, 20 cureth the bloody issue, 23 raiseth from death Iairus daughter, 27 giueth sight to two blind men, 32 healeth a dumbe man possessed of a deuil, 36 and hath compassion of the multitude.

AND hee entred into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

2 *And behold, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Iesus seeing their faith, said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, be of good cheere, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

*Marke 2. 3 luke 5. 18.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes said within themselues, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Iesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore thinke yee euill in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and walke?

6 But that yee may know that the sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (Then saith hee to the sicke of the palsie) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe vnto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marueiled, & glorified God, which had giuen such power vnto men.

9 ¶ *And as Iesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receite of custome: and he saith vnto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

*Marke 2. 14. luke 5. 27.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in the house, behold, many publicanes and sinners, came and sate downe with him and his Disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said vnto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicanes & sinners.

12 But when Iesus heard *that*, hee said vnto them, They that be whole neede not a Physicion, but they that are sicke.

13 But

*Ose. 6. 6. chap. 12. 7. *1.Tim. 1. 15.

13 But goe ye and learne what that meaneth, *I will haue mercy and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, *but sinners to repentance.

*Mar. 2. 18. luke 5. 33.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of Iohn, saying, *Why doe we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus saide vnto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourne, as long as the bridegrome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bridegrome shall bee taken from them, and then shall they fast.

|| *Or, raw, or vnwrought cloth.*

16 No man putteth a piece of ||new cloth vnto an olde garment: for that which is put in to fill it vp, taketh from the garment, & the rent is made worse.

17 Neither doe men put new wine into old bottels: else the bottels breake, and the wine runneth out, and the bottels perish: but they put new wine into new bottels, and both are preserued.

*Mar. 5. 22. luke 8. 41.

18 ¶ *While hee spake these things vnto them, beholde, there came a certaine ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is euen now dead: but come, and lay thy hand vpon her, and she shall liue.

19 And Iesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

20 (¶ And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For she said within her selfe, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Iesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, bee of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre.)

23 And when Iesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said vnto them, Giue place, for the mayd is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 But when the people were put foorth, he went in, and tooke her by the hand: and the mayd arose.

|| *Or, this fame.*

26 And ||the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

28 And when he was come into the

house, the blinde men came to him: and Iesus saith vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to doe this? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, bee it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: and Iesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ *As they went out, beholde, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill. *Luke 11. 14.

33 And when the deuil was cast out, the dumbe spake, and the multitudes marueiled, saying, It was neuer so seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, *He casteth out the deuils through the prince of the deuils. *Chap. 12. 24. marke 3. 22. luke 11. 15.

35 *And Iesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickenesse, and euery disease among the people. *Mar. 6. 6. luke 13. 22.

36 ¶ *But when he saw the multitudes, he was moued with compassion on them, because they ||fainted, and were scattered abroad, *as sheepe hauing no shepheard. *Mar. 6. 34. || *Or, were tyred and lay downe.* *Num. 27. 17.

37 Then saith he vnto his disciples, *The haruest truely is plenteous, but the labourers are few. *Luke 10. 2.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the haruest, that hee will send foorth labourers into his haruest.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ sendeth out his twelue Apostles, enabling them with power to doe miracles, 5 giueth them their charge, teacheth them, 16 comforteth them against persecutions: 40 and promiseth a blessing to those that receiue them.

ANd *when hee had called vnto him his twelue disciples, he gaue them power ||*against* vncleane spirits, to cast them out, and to heale all maner of sickenesse, and all maner of disease. *Mar. 3. 15. luke 9. 1. || *Or, ouer.*

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his

brother, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the Publicane, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue Iesus sent foorth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not:

*Acts 13. 46. 6 *But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

*Luke 10. 9 7 And as yee goe, preach, saying, *The kingdome of heauen is at hand:

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out deuils: freely ye haue receiued, freely giue.

*Mark. 6. 8. luke 9. 3. and 22. 35. || *Or, get.* 9 *||Prouide neither gold, nor siluer, nor brasse in your purses:

*1. Tim. 5. 18. luke 10. 7. 10 Nor scrippe for your iourney, neither two coats, neither shooes, nor yet staues: (*for the workeman is worthy of his meat.)

*Luk. 10. 8. 11 *And into whatsoeuer city or towne ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till yee goe thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.

*Mar. 6. 11. *Acts 13. 51. 14 *And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your words: when yee depart out of that house, or city, *shake off the dust of your feete.

15 Verely I say vnto you, it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of iudgment, then for that citie.

*Luk. 10. 3. || *Or, simple.* 16 ¶ *Behold, I send you foorth as sheepe in the middest of wolues: be yee therefore wise as serpents, and ||harmelesse as doues.

17 But beware of men: for they will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and they will scourge you in their Synagogues,

18 And yee shall be brought before Gouernours and Kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them, and the Gentiles.

*Marke 13. 11. luke 12. 11. 19 *But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought, how or what ye shall speake, for it shall bee giuen you in that same houre what ye shall speake.

20 For it is not yee that speake, but the Spirit of your Father, which speaketh in you.

21 *And the brother shall deliuer vp the brother to death, and the father the childe: and the children shall rise vp against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

*Luke 21. 16.

22 And yee shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: *but he that endureth to the end, shalbe saued.

*Mark. 13. 13.

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another: for verely I say vnto you, ye shall not ||haue gone ouer the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.

|| *Or, end or finish.*

24 *The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his lord.

*Luk. 6. 40. iohn 13. 16.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the seruant as his Lord: If they haue called the Master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

26 Feare them not therefore: *for there is nothing couered, that shall not be reueiled; and hidde, that shall not be knowen.

*Mar. 4. 22. luke 8. 17. and 12. 2.

27 What I tell you in darkenesse, *that* speake yee in light: and what yee heare in the eare, that preach yee vpon the house tops.

28 *And feare not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him which is able to destroy both soule and body in hell.

*Luk. 12. 4.

29 Are not two Sparrowes solde for a ||farthing? And one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

|| *It is in value halfepeny farthing, in the originall: as being the tenth part of the Romane peny.*

30 *But the very haires of your head are all numbred.

31 Feare yee not therefore, ye are of more value then many Sparrowes.

*2. Sam. 14. 11. actes 27. 34.

32 *Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse mee before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

*Luk. 12. 8.

33 *But whosoeuer shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heauen.

*Mar. 8. 38. luke 9. 26. 2. tim. 2. 12.

34 *Thinke not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

*Luke 12. 51.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance *against his father, & the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

*Mic. 7. 6.

36 And a mans foes *shalbe* they of his owne houshold.

*Luke 14. 26. 37 *He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loueth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

*Chap. 16. 24. luke. 9. 23. mar. 8. 34. 38 *And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

*Iohn 12. 25. 39 *He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

*Luk. 10. 16. ioh. 13. 20. 40 ¶ *He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth mee, receiueth him that sent me.

41 He that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receiue a Prophets reward: and he that receiueth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shal receiue a righteous mans reward.

*Mar. 9. 41 42 *And whosoeuer shall giue to drinke vnto one of these litle ones, a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verily I say vnto you, hee shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimonie concerning Iohn. 18 The opinion of the people, both concerning Iohn, and Christ. 20 Christ vpbraideth the vnthankfulnesse, and vnrepentance of Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum: 25 and praising his fathers wisedome in reueiling the Gospel to the simple, 28 hee calleth to him all such as feele the burden of their sinnes.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had made an end of commaunding his twelue Disciples, hee departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

*Luk. 7. 18 2 *Now when Iohn had heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said vnto him, Art thou hee that should come? Or doe wee looke for another?

4 Iesus answered and saide vnto them, Go and shew Iohn againe those things which ye doe heare and see:

*Esai. 35. 6 5 *The blind receiue their sight, and the lame walke, the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare, the dead are raised vp, and *the poore haue the Gospel preached to them.

*Esai. 61. 1

6 And blessed is he, whosoeuer shal not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Iesus began to say vnto the multitudes concerning Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? a reede shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that weare soft cloathing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. *Mala. 3. 1.

11 Verely I say vnto you, Among them that are borne of women, there hath not risen a greater then Iohn the Baptist: notwithstanding, hee that is least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.

12 *And from the dayes of Iohn the Baptist, vntill now, the kingdome of heauen ||suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. *Luk. 16. 16. || *Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men.*

13 For all the Prophets, and the Law prophecied vntill Iohn.

14 And if ye wil receiue *it*, this is *Elias which was for to come.

15 Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ *But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto children, sitting in the markets, and calling vnto their fellowes, *Mala. 4. 5. *Luk. 7. 31

17 And saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: wee haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuill.

19 The sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners: but wisedom is iustified of her children.

20 ¶ *Then began he to vpbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not. *Luke 10. 13.

21 Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes which were done in you, had bene done in Tyre and Sidon, they would haue repented long agoe in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hell: For if the mighty works which haue beene done in thee, had bin done in Sodome, it would haue remained vntill this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in yͤ day of iudgment, then for thee.

*Luke 10. 21. 25 ¶ *At that time Iesus answered, and said, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things frō the wise & prudent, & hast reueiled them vnto babes.

26 Euen so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

*Iohn 3. 35 *Iohn 6. 46. 27 *All things are deliuered vnto me of my father: and no man knoweth the sonne but the father: *neither knoweth any man the father, saue the sonne, and hee to whomsoeuer the sonne will reueile him.

28 ¶ Come vnto me all yee that labour, and are heauy laden, and I will giue you rest.

*Iere. 6. 16 29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learne of me, for I am meeke and lowly in heart: *and yee shall find rest vnto your soules.

*1. Iohn 5. 3. 30 *For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

1 Christ reprooueth the blindnesse of the Pharisees concerning the breach of the Sabbath, 3 by Scriptures, 9 by reason, 13 and by a miracle. 22 He healeth the man possessed that was blind, and dumbe. 31 Blasphemie against the holy Ghost shall neuer be forgiuen. 36 Account shalbe made of idle words. 38 He rebuketh the vnfaithfull, who seeke after a signe: 49 and sheweth who is his brothe, sister, and mother.

*Marke 2. 23. luke 6. 1. deut. 23. 25 AT that time, *Iesus went on the Sabbath day thorow the corne, & his Disciples were an hungred, and beganne to pluck the eares of corne, and to eate.

2 But when the Pharises saw it, they said vnto him, Behold, thy Disciples doe that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath day.

*1. Sam. 21. 6. 3 But he said vnto them, Haue yee not read *what Dauid did when hee was an hungred, and they that were with him,

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eate the shew bread, which

was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, *but only for the Priests?

*Exod. 29. 33. leuit. 8. 31. and 24. 9. *Num. 28. 9.

5 Or haue yee not read in the *law, how that on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the Temple profane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse?

6 But I say vnto you, that in this place is *one* greater then the Temple.

7 But if yee had knowen what this meaneth, *I will haue mercy, and not sacrifice, yee would not haue condemned the guiltlesse.

*Osee 6. 7. chap. 9. 13.

8 For the sonne of man is Lord euen of the Sabbath day.

9 *And when hee was departed thence, he went into their Synagogue.

*Marke 3. 1. luke 6. 6.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And hee said vnto them, What man shal there be among you, that shall haue one sheepe: and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will hee not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheepe? Wherefore it is lawfull to doe well on the Sabbath dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and hee stretched it forth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharises went out, and ||held a counsell against him, how they might destroy him.

|| *Or, tooke counsell.*

15 But when Iesus knew it, hee withdrew himselfe from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him knowen:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

18 *Behold, my seruant whom I haue chosen, my beloued in whom my soule is well pleased: I will put my spirit vpon him, and he shall shew iudgement to the Gentiles.

*Esai. 42. 1.

19 He shall not striue, nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shal he not breake, and smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he send forth iudgment vnto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

*Luke 11. 14. 22 ¶ *Then was brought vnto him one possessed with a deuill, blinde, and dumbe: and hee healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumbe both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the sonne of Dauid?

*Cha. 9. 34 24 *But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This *fellow* doeth not cast out deuils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the deuils.

25 And Iesus knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and euery citie or house diuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is diuided against himselfe; how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your Iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, & spoile his goods, except hee first binde the strong man, and then he will spoile his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

*Mar. 3. 28. luke 12. 10. 1. iohn 5. 16. 31 ¶ Wherefore I say vnto you, *All maner of sinne and blasphemie shall be forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie against the *holy* Ghost, shall not bee forgiuen vnto men.

32 And whosoeuer speaketh a word against the sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good: Or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: For the tree is knowen by his fruit.

*Luke 6. 45. 34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being euil, speake good things? *For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth foorth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure, bringeth foorth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, That euery idle word that men

shall speake, they

shall giue accompt thereof in the day of Iudgement.

37 For by thy wordes thou shalt bee iustified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ *Then certaine of the Scribes, and of the Pharisees, *Chap. 16.
answered, saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee. 1. luke 11.

39 But hee answered, and said to them, An euill and 29. 1. cor.
adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall 1. 22.
no signe be giuen to it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

40 *For as Ionas was three dayes and three nights in the *Iona. 1.
whales belly: so shal the sonne of man be three daies and 17.
three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this
generation, and shall condemne it, *because they repented *Iona. 3.
at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas 5.
is here.

42 *The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudge- *1. Kin.
ment with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she 10. 1.
came from the vttermost parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

43 *When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, hee *Luke 11.
walketh thorow dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 24.

44 Then he saith, I will returne into my house from whence I came out; And when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himselfe seuen other
spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell
there: *And the last state of that man is worse then the first. *Heb. 6.
Euen so shal it be also vnto this wicked generation. 4. and 10.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, *behold, his mother 26. 2. pet. 2. 20.
and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him. *Mark. 3.

47 Then one saide vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy 31. luke 8.
brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee. 20.

48 But he answered, and said vnto him that told him, Who is my mother? And who are my brethren?

49 And hee stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of my Father which is in heauen, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

3 The parable of the Sower, and the seed: 18 the exposition of it. 24 The parable of the tares, 31 of the mustard seed, 33 of the leuen, 44 of the hidden treasure, 45 of the pearle, 47 of the draw-net cast into the Sea, 53 And how Christ is contemned of his own countrymen.

*Mark. 4. 1.

THe same day went Iesus out of the house, *and sate by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together vnto him, *so* that hee went into a ship, and sate, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

*Luke 8. 5.

3 And hee spake many things vnto them in parables, saying, *Behold, a sower went foorth to sow.

4 And when he sowed, some *seedes* fell by the wayes side, and the foules came, and deuoured them vp.

5 Some fell vpon stony places, where they had not much earth: and foorthwith they sprung vp, because they had no deepenesse of earth.

6 And when the Sunne was vp, they were scorched: and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thornes sprung vp, & choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought foorth fruit, some an hundred folde, some sixtie folde, some thirty folde.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And the disciples came, and sayd vnto him, Why speakest thou vnto them in parables?

11 He answered, and said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know the mysteries of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

*Chap. 25. 29.

12 *For whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen, and he shall haue more abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that hee hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they heare not, neither doe they vnderstand.

*Esai 6. 9. mark. 4. 12. luke 8. 10. ioh. 12. 40. acts 28. 26. rom. 11. 8.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias, which saith, *By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand: and seeing yee shall see, and shall not perceiue.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed

grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they haue closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

17 For verely I say vnto you, *that many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those things which yee see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them. *Luke 10. 24.

18 ¶ Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: this is hee which receiued seede by the way side.

20 But he that receiued the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, & anon with ioy receiueth it:

21 Yet hath hee not root in himselfe, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that receiued seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the word, and he becommeth vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued seed into the good ground, is hee that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth foorth, some an hundred fold, some sixtie, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying; The kingdome of heauen is likened vnto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came & sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the housholder came, and said vnto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seede in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, An enemy hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we goe and gather them vp?

29 But he said, Nay: lest while yee

gather vp the tares, ye root vp also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together vntil the haruest: and in the time of haruest, I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundels to burne them: but gather the wheat into my barne.

*Mar. 4. 30 luke 13. 19

31 ¶ Another parable put he foorth vnto them, saying, *The kingdome of heauen is like to a graine of mustard seed, which a man tooke, and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of al seeds: but when it is growen, it is the greatest among herbes, and becommeth a tree: so that the birds of the aire come and lodge in the branches thereof.

*Luke 13. 20.

† *The worde in the Greek is a measure conteining about a peck and an halfe, wanting litle more then a pinte.*

33 ¶ *Another parable spake he vnto them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three †measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

*Marke 4. 33.

34 *All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake hee not vnto them:

*Psal. 78. 2.

35 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, *I will open my mouth in parables, I wil vtter things which haue bin kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, Hee that soweth the good seed, is the sonne of man.

38 The field is the world. The good seed, are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

*Ioel. 3. 13. reue. 14. 15

39 The enemie that sowed them, is the deuill. *The haruest, is the ende of the world. And the reapers are the Angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shall it be in the end of this world.

|| *Or, scandales.*

41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all ||things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wayling and gnashing of teeth.

*Dan. 12. 3

43 *Then shall the righteous shine foorth as the Sunne, in the kingdome

of their father. Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, hee hideth, and for ioy thereof goeth and selleth all that hee hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a marchant man, seeking goodly pearles:

46 Who when hee had found one pearle of great price, he went and solde all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of euery kind,

48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sate downe, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the ende of the world: the Angels shal come forth, and seuer the wicked from among the iust,

50 And shal cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing, and gnashing of teeth.

51 Iesus saith vnto them, Haue ye vnderstood all these things? They say vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is instructed vnto the kingdom of heauen, is like vnto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth foorth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these parables, hee departed thence.

54 *And when hee was come into his owne countrey, he *Marke 6.
taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they were 1
astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisedome, luke. 4. 16.
and these mighty works?

55 *Is not this the Carpenters sonne? Is not his mother *Ioh. 6.
called Marie? and his brethren, Iames, and Ioses, and Simon, 42.
and Iudas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with vs? whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus said vnto
them, *A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne *Mar. 6.
countrey, and in his owne house. luke 4. 24.

58 And hee did not many mighty workes there, because iohn 4. 44.
of their vnbeliefe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Herods opinion of Christ. 3 Wherefore Iohn Baptist was beheaded. 13 Iesus departeth into a desert place: 15 Where hee feedeth fiue thousand men with fiue loaues, and two fishes: 22 he walketh on the Sea to his Disciples: 34 and landing at Gennezaret, healeth the sicke by the touch of the hemme of his garment.

*Marke 6. 14. luke 9. 7

AT that time *Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus,

|| *Or, are wrought by him.*

2 And said vnto his seruants, This is Iohn the Baptist, hee is risen from the dead, and therfore mighty workes ||doe shew foorth themselues in him.

*Luke 3. 19.

3 ¶ *For Herode had layd hold on Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.

*Leuit. 18. 16. and 20. 21.

4 For Iohn said vnto him, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.

*Chap. 21. 26.

5 And when he would haue put him to death, hee feared the multitude, *because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herode.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Giue me heere Iohn Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorie: neuerthelesse for the othes sake, and them which sate with him at meate, he commanded it to be giuen her:

10 And he sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and giuen to the Damsell: and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his Disciples came, and took vp the body, and buried it, and went and told Iesus.

*Marke 6. 32. luke 9. 10.

13 ¶ *When Iesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship, into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foote, out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was mooued with compassion toward them, and he healed their sicke.

*Iohn 6. 5. marke 6. 35.

15 ¶ *And when it was euening, his Disciples came to him, saying, This is a

desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may goe into the villages, and buy themselues victuals.

16 But Iesus said vnto them, They neede not depart; giue yee them to eate.

17 And they say vnto him, We haue heere but fiue loaues, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And hee commanded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, & tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looking vp to heauen, hee blessed, and brake, and gaue the loaues to his Disciples, and the Disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, & were filled: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Iesus constrained his Disciples to get into a ship, and to goe before him vnto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 *And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went vp into a mountaine apart to pray: *and when the euening was come, he was there alone:

*Marke 6. 46.
*Iohn 6. 16.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the Sea, tossed with waues: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the Sea.

26 And when the Disciples saw him walking on the Sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they cried out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good cheere: it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him, and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Iesus.

30 But when he saw the wind ||boysterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sinke, he cried, saying, Lord saue me.

|| *Or, strong.*

31 And immediately Iesus stretched foorth his hand, and caught him, and said vnto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a

trueth thou art the sonne of God.

*Marke 6. 53.
34 ¶ *And when they were gone ouer, they came into yͤ land of Genesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought vnto him al that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hemme of his garment; and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Christ reprooueth the Scribes, and Pharisees, for transgressing Gods Commaundements through their owne traditions: 11 teacheth how that which goeth into the mouth, doeth not defile a man. 21 He healeth the daughter of the woman of Canaan, 30 and other great multitudes: 32 and with seuen loaues and a few little fishes feedeth foure thousand men, beside women and children.

*Mark. 7. 1.
THEN *came to Iesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their handes when they eat bread.

3 But hee answered, and said vnto them, Why doe you also transgresse the Commandement of God by your tradition?

*Exod. 20. 12. deut. 5. 16. *Exod. 21. 17. leui. 20. 9. pro. 20. 20.
4 For God commaunded, saying, *Honour thy father and mother: And *hee that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

*Mar. 7. 11, 12.
5 But yee say, Whosoeuer shall say to his father or his mother, *It is a gift by whatsoeuer thou mightest bee profited by me,

6 And honour not his father or his mother, *hee shall be free.* Thus haue yee made the Commaundement of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Yee hypocrites, well did Esaias prophecie of you, saying,

*Esa. 29. 14.
8 *This people draweth nigh vnto mee with their mouth, and honoureth mee with their lips: but their heart is farre from me.

9 But in vaine they do worship me, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

*Marke 7. 14.
10 ¶ *And he called the multitude, and said vnto them, Heare and vnderstand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which

commeth out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said vnto him, Knowest
thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this
saying?

13 But he answered, and said, *Euery plant which my *Ioh. 15.
heauenly father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp. 2.

14 Let them alone: *they be blinde leaders of the blinde. *Luke 6.
And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the 39.
ditch.

15 *Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Declare vnto *Mar. 7.
vs this parable. 17.

16 And Iesus said, Are yee also yet without vnderstanding?

17 Doe not yee yet vnderstand, that whatsoeuer entreth in
at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the
draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come
forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 *For out of the heart proceed euill thoughts, murders, *Gen. 6. 5.
adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnes, blasphemies. and 8. 21.

20 These are the things which defile a man: But to eate
with vnwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ *Then Iesus went thence, and departed into the *Marke 7.
coastes of Tyre and Sidon. 24.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same
coasts, & cried vnto him, saying, Haue mercy on me, O
Lord, thou sonne of Dauid, my daughter is grieuously vexed
with a deuill.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples
came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she
cryeth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, *I am not sent, but vnto the *Chap. 10.
lost sheepe of the house of Israel. 6.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord,
helpe me.

26 But he answered, and said, It is not meete to take the
childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Trueth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the
crummes which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O woman, great
is thy faith: be it vnto thee euen as thou wilt. And her
daughter was made whole from that very houre.

29 *And

*Marke 7. 31. 29 *And Iesus departed frō thence, and came nigh vnto the sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there.

*Esay 35. 5. 30 *And great multitudes came vnto him, hauing with them those that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them downe at Iesus feet, and he healed them:

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred, when they saw the dumbe to speake, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

*Mark. 8. 1. 32 ¶ *Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples say vnto him, Whence should we haue so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? And they said, Seuen, and a few little fishes.

35 And hee commaunded the multitude to sit downe on the ground.

36 And he tooke the seuen loaues and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and brake them, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate, and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and tooke ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The Pharises require a signe. 6 Iesus warneth his disciples of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadduces. 13 The peoples opinion of Christ, 16 and Peters confession of him. 21 Iesus foresheweth his death, 23 Reproouing Peter for disswading him from it: 24 And admonisheth those that will follow him, to beare the Crosse.

*Mar. 8. 11. luke 12. 54. THe *Pharises also, with the Sadduces, came, and tempting, desired him that hee would shew them a signe from heauen.

2 He answered, and said vnto them, When it is euening, yee say, *It will bee* faire weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foule weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, yee can discerne the face of the skie, but can ye not discerne the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen vnto it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas. And hee left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Pharises, and of the Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* because we haue taken no bread.

8 Which when Iesus perceiued, he said vnto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread?

9 *Doe ye not yet vnderstand, neither remember the fiue *Chap. 14.
loaues of the fiue thousand, and how many baskets ye tooke vp? 17.

10 *Neither the seuen loaues of the foure thousand, and *Chap. 15.
how many baskets ye tooke vp? 34.

11 How is it that ye doe not vnderstand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises, and of the Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they how that he bade them not beware of the leauen of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces.

13 ¶ When Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi,
he asked his disciples, saying, *Whom doe men say, that I *Mar. 8.
the sonne of man am? 27.
luke 9. 18.

14 And they said, Some *say that thou art* Iohn the Baptist, some Elias, and others Ieremias, or one of yͤ Prophets.

15 He saith vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered, and said, *Thou art Christ *Ioh. 6.
the sonne of the liuing God. 69.

17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar Iona: for flesh and blood hath not reueiled it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

18 And

*Ioh. 1. 42. 18 And I say also vnto thee, that *thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my Church: and the gates of hell shall not preuaile against it.

*Ioh. 20. 23. 19 *And I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heauen: whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heauen.

20 Then charged hee his disciples that they should tel no man that he was Iesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time foorth began Iesus to shew vnto his disciples, how that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders and chiefe Priests & Scribes, and be killed, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it farre from thee Lord: This shal not be vnto thee.

23 But he turned, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind mee, Satan, thou art an offence vnto me: for thou sauourest not the things that *be* of God, but those that *be* of men.

*Chap. 10. 38. mar. 8. 34. 24 ¶ *Then said Iesus vnto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer will lose his his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if hee shal gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man giue in exchange for his soule?

27 For the sonne of man shall come in the glory of his
*Psa. 62. 12 rom. 2. 6. father, with his Angels: *and then he shall reward euery
man according to his works.

*Mar. 9. 1. luke 9. 27. 28 Verely I say vnto you, *There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Sonne of man comming in his Kingdome.

CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healeth the lunatike, 22 foretelleth his owne passion, 24 and payeth tribute.

*Mark. 9. 2. luke 9. 28. ANd *after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh Peter, Iames, and Iohn his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high mountaine apart,

2 And was transfigured before them,

and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and saide vnto Iesus, Lord, it is good for vs to be here: If thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 *While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud ouershadowed *2. Pet. 1.
them: and behold a voyce out of the cloude, which saide, 17.
This is my beloued sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they saw no man, saue Iesus only.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, vntil the sonne of man bee risen againe from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, *Why then say the *Chap. 11.
Scribes that Elias must first come? 14. mark.

11 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Elias truely 9. 11.
shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they listed: Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the Disciples vnderstood that he spake vnto them of Iohn the Baptist.

14 ¶ *And when they were come to the multitude, there *Mar. 9.
came to him a certaine man, kneeling downe to him, and saying, 17. luke 9. 38.

15 Lord, haue mercie on my sonne, for he is lunatike, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O faithlesse and peruerse generation, how long shall I bee with you? howe long shal I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuill, and hee departed out of him: and the childe was cured from that very houre.

19 Then came the Disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

*Luke 17. 6.

20 And Iesus said vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: for verily I say vnto you, *If yee haue faith as a graine of mustard seed, yee shall say vnto this mountaine; Remoue hence to yonder place: and it shall remoue, and nothing shall be vnpossible vnto you.

21 Howbeit, this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

*Mat. 20. 17. mar. 9. 31. luke 9. 44.

22 ¶ *And while they abode in Galilee, Iesus said vnto them, The sonne of man shall be betraied into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised againe: And they were exceeding sorie.

|| *Called in the originall Didrachma, being in valew fifteene pence.*

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued ||tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your master pay tribute?

25 Hee saith, Yes. And when hee was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom doe the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their owne children, or of strangers?

|| *Or, a stater. It is halfe an ounce of siluer, in valew two shillings sixe pence, after fiue shillings the ounce.*

26 Peter saith vnto him, Of strangers. Iesus saith vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, least we should offend them, goe thou to the Sea, and cast an hooke, and take vp the fish that first commeth vp: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find ||a piece of money: that take, and giue vnto them for me, and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ warneth his Disciples to be humble and harmelesse: 7 To auoide offences, and not to despise the little ones: 15 Teacheth howe we are to deale with our brethren, when they offend vs: 21 And how oft to forgiue them: 23 Which hee setteth forth by a parable of the King, that tooke account of his seruants, 32 And punished him, who shewed no mercie to his fellowe.

*Marke 9. 33. luke 9. 46.

A*T the same time came the Disciples vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the Kingdome of heauen?

2 And Iesus called a little child

vnto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say vnto you, *Except yee be conuerted, and become as little children, yee shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

*Chap. 19. 14. 1. cor. 14. 20.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is greatest in the Kingdome of heauen.

5 And who so shall receiue one such little child in my name, receiueth me.

6 *But who so shall offend one of these little ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the Sea.

*Marke 9. 42. luke 17. 1, 2.

7 ¶ Woe vnto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 *Wherefore if thy hand or thy foote offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then hauing two hands or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire.

*Chap. 5. 30. mar. 9. 45.

9 And if thine eie offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eie, rather then hauing two eies, to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that yee despise not one of these little ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their Angels do alwaies behold the face of my father which is in heauen.

11 *For the sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost.

*Luke 19. 10.

12 *How thinke yee? if a man haue an hundred sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leaue the ninetie and nine, and goeth into the mountaines, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

*Luke 15. 4.

13 And if so be that he find it, Verily I say vnto you, hee reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray.

14 Euen so, it is not the will of your father which is in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreouer, *if thy brother shall trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he shall heare thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

*Leuit. 19. 17. luke 17. 3.

16 But if he will not heare thee, then

take

*Deut. 19. 15. iohn 8. 17. 2. cor. 13. 1. hebr. 10. 28.

take with thee one or two more, that in *the mouth of two or three witnesses, euery word may be established.

17 And if hee shall neglect to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: But if he neglect to heare the Church, let him be vnto thee as an *heathen man, and a Publicane.

*1. Cor. 5. 9. 2. thes. 3. 14.

*Iohn 20. 23. 1. cor. 5. 4.

18 Verily I say vnto you, *Whatsoeuer ye shall binde on earth, shall bee bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer yee shall loose on earth, shall bee loosed in heauen.

19 Againe I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall aske, it shall bee done for them of my father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

*Luke 17. 4.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sinne against mee, and I forgiue him? *till seuen times?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, Vntill seuen times: but, Vntill seuentie times seuen.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine king, which would take accompt of his seruants.

||*A talent is* 750. *ounces of siluer, which after fiue shillings the ounce, is* 187.*li.* 10.*s.*

24 And when hee had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him which ought him ten thousand ||talents.

25 But forasmuch as hee had not to pay, his lord commanded him to bee sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

||*Or, besought him.*

26 The seruant therfore fell downe, and ||worshipped him, saying, Lord, haue patience with mee, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the Lord of that seruant was moued with compassion, and loosed him, and forgaue him the debt.

||*The Romane penie is the eighth part of an ounce, which after* 5. *shillings the ounce is* 7.*d. ob.*

28 But the same seruant went out, and found one of his fellow-seruants, which ought him an hundred ||pence: and hee layd handes on him, and tooke him by the throte, saying, Pay mee that thou owest.

29 And his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till hee should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-seruants saw what was done, they were very sorie, and came, and told vnto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that hee had called him, said vnto him, O thou wicked seruant, I forgaue thee all that debt because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also haue had compassion on thy fellow-seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till hee should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewise shall my heauenly Father doe also vnto you, if yee from your hearts forgiue not euery one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sicke: 3 answereth the Pharisees concerning diuorcement: 10 sheweth when mariage is necessary: 13 receiueth litle children: 16 instructeth the yong man how to attaine eternall life, 20 and how to be perfect: 23 telleth his disciples how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God, 27 and promiseth reward to those that forsake any thing, to follow him.

AND it came to passe, *that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coastes of Iudea, beyond Iordane:

*Mar. 10. 1.

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came vnto him, tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for euery cause?

4 And hee answered, and said vnto them, Haue ye not read, *that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

*Gen. 1. 27.

5 And said, *For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shall cleaue to his wife: and *they twaine shalbe one flesh.

*Gen. 2. 24. ephe. 5. 31.
*1. Cor. 6. 16.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say vnto him, *Why did Moses then command to giue a writing of diuorcement, and to put her away?

*Deut. 24. 1.

8 Hee saith vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts,

suffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so.

*Cha. 5. 32. mar. 10. 11. luke 16. 18. 1. cor. 7. 11.

9 *And I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say vnto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marrie.

11 But hee said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this saying, saue they to whom it is giuen.

12 For there are some Eunuches, which were so borne from their mothers wombe: and there are some Eunuches, which were made Eunuches of men: and there be Eunuches, which haue made themselues Eunuches for the kingdome of heauens sake. He that is able to receiue *it*, let him receiue *it*.

*Mark. 10. 13. luke 18. 15.

13 ¶ *Then were there brought vnto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come vnto me: for of such is yͤ kingdome of heauen.

15 And he laide his hands on them, and departed thence.

*Marke 10. 17. luke 18. 18.

16 ¶ *And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do, that I may haue eternall life?

17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, *that is* God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandements.

*Exod. 20. 13.

18 He saith vnto him, Which? Iesus said, *Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The young man saith vnto him, All these things haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect, goe and sell that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Iesus vnto his dis-

ciples, Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camel to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saued?

26 But Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God al things are possible.

27 ¶ *Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Behold, we haue forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we haue therefore?

*Mark. 10. 28. luke 18. 28.

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that ye which haue followed me, in the regeneration when the Sonne of man shal sit in the throne of his glory, *ye also shal sit vpon twelue thrones, iudging the twelue tribes of Israel.

*Luke 22. 30.

29 And euery one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, shall receiue an hundred fold, and shall inherite euerlasting life.

30 *But many that are first, shall be last, and the last shall be first.

*Chap. 20. 16. mark. 10. 31. luk. 13. 30.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ by the similitude of the labourers in the vineyard, sheweth that God is debtor vnto no man: 17 Foretelleth his passion: 20 By answering the mother of Zebedeus children, teacheth his disciples to be lowly: 30 and giueth two blinde men their sight.

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when hee had agreed with the labourers for a ‖peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

‖ *The Romane peny is the eight part of an ounce, which after fiue shillings the ounce, is seuen pence halfepeny.*

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And said vnto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, & whatsoeuer is right, I wil giue you. And they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleuenth houre, he went out, and found others standing

idle, and saith vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He saith vnto them, Go ye also into the vineyard: and whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 So when euen was come, the lord of the vineyard saith vnto his Steward, Call the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning from the last, vnto the first.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleuenth houre, they receiued euery man a penie.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should haue receiued more, and they likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

|| *Or, haue continued one houre onely.*

12 Saying, These last ||haue wrought *but* one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden, and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penie?

14 Take that thine is, and goe thy way, I will giue vnto this last, euen as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for mee to doe what I wil with mine owne? Is thine eye euill, because I am good?

*Chap. 19. 30.

16 *So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many bee called, but fewe chosen.

*Mar. 10. 32. luke 18. 31.

17 ¶ *And Iesus going vp to Hierusalem, tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be betraied vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

*Ioh. 18. 32

19 *And shal deliuer him to the Gentiles to mocke, and to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day he shall rise againe.

*Mar. 10. 35.

20 ¶ *Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said vnto her, What wilt thou? She saith vnto him, Grant, that these my two sonnes may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Iesus answered, and said,

Ye know not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say vnto him, We are able.

23 And he saith vnto them, Yee shall drinke indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to giue, but *it shall be giuen* to them for whom it is prepared of my father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moued with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, *Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion ouer them, and they that are great, exercise authoritie vpon them. *Luk. 22. 25.

26 But it shall not be so among you: But whosoeuer will bee great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him be your seruant.

28 Euen as the *Sonne of man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many. *Phil. 2. 7.

29 *And as they departed from Hiericho, a great multitude followed him. *Mar. 10. 46. luke 18. 35.

30 ¶ And behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cried out, saying, Haue mercie on vs, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should holde their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Haue mercie on vs, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid.

32 And Iesus stood still, and called them, and saide, What will yee that I shall doe vnto you?

33 They say vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediatly their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Hierusalem vpon an asse, 12 driueth the buyers and sellers out of the Temple, 17 curseth the fig-tree, 23 putteth to silence the Priests and Elders, 28 and rebuketh them by the similitude of the two sonnes, 35 and the husbandmen, who slew such as were sent vnto them.

And

*Marke 11. 1. luke 19. 29.

A*Nd when they drewe nigh vnto Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of Oliues, then sent Iesus two Disciples,

2 Saying vnto them, Goe into the village ouer against you, and straightway yee shall find an Asse tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, yee shall say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway hee will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

*Esai. 62. 11. zach. 9. 9. iohn 12. 15.

5 *Tell yee the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an Asse, and a colt, the foale of an Asse.

*Marke 11. 2.

6 *And the Disciples went, and did as Iesus commanded them,

7 And brought the Asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid: Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

*Marke 11. 15. luke 19. 45. iohn 2. 13.

10 *And when hee was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was mooued, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that solde doues,

*Esai. 56. 7. *Iere. 7. 11. mar. 11. 17. luke 19. 46.

13 And said vnto them, It is written, *My house shall be called the house of prayer, *but yee haue made it a denne of theeues.

14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the Temple, & he healed them.

15 And when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, & the children crying in the temple, & saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid, they were sore displeased,

16 And said vnto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Iesus saith vnto them, Yea, haue yee neuer read, *Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise? *Psal. 8.2.

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning, as hee returned into the citie, he hungred.

19 *And when he saw a figge tree in the way, hee came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaues only, and said vnto it, Let no fruite growe on thee hence forward for euer. And presently the figge tree withered away. *Marke 11. 13.

20 And when the Disciples saw it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figge tree withered away?

21 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, if yee haue faith, and doubt not, yee shall not onely doe this *which is done* to the figge tree, but also, if ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remoued, and be thou cast into the Sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoeuer yee shall aske in prayer, beleeuing, ye shall receiue.

23 ¶ *And when he was come into the temple, the chiefe Priests and the Elders of the people came vnto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie? *Marke 11. 27. luke 20. 1.

24 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I also will aske you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? and they reasoned with themselues saying, If we shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?

26 But if we shall say, Of men, we feare the people, *for all hold Iohn as a Prophet. *Chap. 14. 5.

27 And they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke you? A certaine man had two sonnes, and he came to the first, and said, Sonne, goe worke to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered, & said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And hee came to the second, and said likewise: and hee answered, and said, I *goe* sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? They say vnto him, The first. Iesus saith vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdome of God before you.

*Chap. 3. 1.

32 For *Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him. And ye when ye had seene it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

*Esa. 5 1. iere. 2. 21. mark. 12. 1. luke 20. 9.

33 ¶ Heare another parable. There was a certaine householder, *which planted a Vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-presse in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruite drew neere, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen, that they might receiue the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe hee sent other seruants, moe then the first, and they did vnto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent vnto them his sonne, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

*Chap. 26. 3. iohn. 11. 53.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among themselues, *This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and let vs sease on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the Vineyard, and slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the Vineyard commeth, what will he doe vnto those husbandmen?

41 They say vnto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his Vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

*Psal. 118. 22. acts. 4. 11.

42 Iesus saith vnto them, *Did ye neuer reade in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner? This is the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and giuen to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And *whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, shalbe broken: but on whom soeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they tooke him for a Prophet.

*Rom. 9. 33. 1. pet. 2. 7. esa. 8. 14.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The parable of the marriage of the Kings sonne. 9 The vocation of the Gentiles. 12 The punishment of him that wanted the wedding garment. 15 Tribute ought to be payed to Cæsar. 23 Christ confuteth the Sadducees for the Resurrection: 34 answereth the Lawyer, which is the first and great Commandement: 41 and poseth the Pharisees about the Messias.

AND Iesus answered, *and spake vnto them againe by parables, and said,

*Luke 14. 16. reuel. 19. 9.

2 The Kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King, which made a marriage for his sonne,

3 And sent forth his seruants to call them that were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come.

4 Againe, hee sent foorth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Beholde, I haue prepared my dinner; my oxen, and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, another to his merchandize:

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth, and hee sent foorth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then saith hee to his seruants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Goe yee therefore into the high wayes, and as many as yee shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the high wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with ghests.

11 ¶

11 ¶ And when the King came in to see the guests, hee sawe there a man, which had not on a wedding garment,

12 And hee sayth vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not hauing a wedding garment? And hee was speechlesse.

13 Then said the king to the seruants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkenesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

*Chap. 20. 16.

14 *For many are called, but few are chosen.

*Marke 12. 13. luke 20. 20.

15 ¶ *Then went the Pharises, and tooke counsell, how they might intangle him in his talke.

16 And they sent out vnto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, wee know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in trueth, neither carest thou for any man; for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

||*In value seuen pence halfepeny, chap.* 20. 2.

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought vnto him a ||peny.

||*Or, inscription.*

20 And he sayth vnto them, Whose is this image and ||superscription?

*Rom. 13. 7

21 They say vnto him, Cesars. Then sayth he vnto them, *Render therefore vnto Cesar, the things which are Cesars: and vnto God, the things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard *these wordes*, they marueiled, and left him, and went their way.

*Marke 12. 18. luke 20. 27.
*Acts 23. 8.
*Deu. 25. 5.

23 ¶ *The same day came to him the Sadduces, *which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, *Moses said, If a man die, hauing no children, his brother shall marrie his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first when he had maried a wife, deceased, and hauing no issue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of al the woman died also.

28 Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seuen? for they all had her.

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto

them, Yee doe erre, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, haue ye not read that which was spoken vnto you by God, saying,

32 *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. *Exod. 3. 6.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ *But when the Pharises had heard that he had put the Sadduces to silence, they were gathered together. *Marke 12. 28.

35 Then one of them, which was a Lawyer, asked *him* a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great Commandement in the Law?

37 Iesus sayd vnto him, *Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde. *Deut. 6. 5. luke 10. 27.

38 This is the first and great Commandement.

39 And the second is like vnto it, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Leuit. 19. 18.

40 On these two Commandements hang all the Law and the Prophets.

41 ¶ *While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus asked them, *Marke 12. 35. luke 20. 41.

42 Saying, What thinke yee of Christ? whose sonne is hee? They say vnto him, The sonne of Dauid.

43 He saith vnto them, How then doth Dauid in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The Lord said vnto my Lord, *Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole? *Psal. 110. 1.

45 If Dauid then call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And no man was able to answere him a word, neither durst any man (from that day foorth) aske him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Christ admonisheth the people to follow the good doctrine, not the euill examples of the Scribes and Pharises. 5 His disciples must beware of their ambition. 13 Hee denounceth eight woes against their hypocrisie and blindnesse: 34 and prophecieth of the destruction of Hierusalem.

THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The Scribes and the Pharises sit in Moses seate:

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe, but doe not ye after their workes: for they say, and doe not.

*Luk. 11. 46

4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but *they themselues* will not mooue them with *one* of their fingers.

*Num. 15. 38. deut. 22 12.

5 But all their workes they doe, for to be seene of men: *they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

*Mark. 12. 38. luke. 11 43.

6 *And loue the vppermost roomes at feasts, and the chiefe seats in the Synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

*Iames 3. 1

8 *But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *euen* Christ, and all ye are brethren.

*Mala. 1. 6.

9 And call no man your father vpon the earth: *for one is your father which is in heauen.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *euen* Christ.

11 But hee that is greatest among you, shall be your seruant.

*Luk. 14. 11 and 18. 14.

12 *And whosoeuer shall exalt himselfe, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himselfe, shall be exalted.

*Luk. 11. 52.

13 ¶ But *woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for yee shut vp the kingdom of heauen against men: For yee neither goe in your selues, neither suffer ye them that are entring, to goe in.

*Mar. 12. 40. luk. 20. 47.

14 *Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for yee deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation.

15 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites; for yee compasse Sea and land to make one Proselyte, and when hee is made, yee make him two fold more the childe of hell then your selues.

16 Woe vnto you, yee blind guides, which say, Whosoeuer shall sweare by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer shal sweare by the gold of the Temple, he is a debter.

17 Ye fooles and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoeuer shall sweare by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gift that is vpon it, he is ||guiltie.

||Or, a debter, or bound

19 Ye fooles and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the Altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Who so therefore shall sweare by the Altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And who so shall sweare by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall sweare by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; *for yee pay tithe of mint, and annise, and cummine, and haue omitted the weightier matters of the Law, iudgement, mercie and faith: these ought ye to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

*Luk. 11. 42

24 Ye blind guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; *for yee make cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.

*Luk. 11. 39

26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may bee cleane also.

27 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, for yee are like vnto whited sepulchres, which indeed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all vncleannesse.

28 Euen so, yee also outwardly appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If wee had beene in the dayes of our fathers, wee would not haue bene partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 Wherefore ye bee witnesses vnto your selues, that yee are the children of them which killed the Prophets.

32 Fil ye vp then the measure of your fathers.

33 Yee serpents, yee generation of vipers, How can yee escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, and wisemen, and Scribes, and some of them yee shall kill and crucifie, and some of them shall yee scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie:

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood shed
*Gen. 4. 8. vpon the earth, *from the blood of righteous Abel, vnto the
blood of Zacharias, sonne of Barachias, whom yee slew betweene the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say vnto you, All these things shal come vpon this generation.

*Luke 13. 34. 37 *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that killest the Pro-
*2. Chro. 24. 21. phets, *and stonest them which are sent vnto thee, how
often would *I haue gathered thy children together, euen as
*4. Esd. 1. 30. a hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and yee would
not?

38 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate.

39 For I say vnto you, yee shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple: 3 what, and how great calamities shall be before it: 29 the signes of his comming to iudgement. 36 And because that day and houre is vnknowen, 42 we ought to watch like good seruants expecting euery moment our masters comming.

*Mar. 13. 1. luke 21. 5. ANd *Iesus went out, and departed from the temple, and
his Disciples came *to him*, for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Iesus said vnto them, See yee not all these things?
*Luke 19. 44. Verily I say vnto you, *there shall not be left heere one
stone vpon another, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 ¶ And as he sate vpon the mount of Oliues, the Disciples came vnto him priuately, saying, Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the signe of thy comming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my name,

saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

6 And yee shall heare of warres, and rumors of warres: See that yee be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrowes.

9 *Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and yee shall bee hated of all nations for my names sake. *Chap. 10. 17. luke 21. 12. iohn 16. 2.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false Prophets shall rise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shal abound, the loue of many shall waxe cold.

13 But he that shall endure vnto the end, the same shall be saued.

14 And this Gospell of the kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse vnto al nations, and then shall the end come.

15 *When yee therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by *Daniel the Prophet, stand in the holy place, (who so readeth, let him vnderstand.) *Mar. 13. 14. *Dan. 9. 27.

16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come downe, to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field, returne backe to take his clothes.

19 And woe vnto them that are with child, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray yee that your flight bee not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor euer shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortned, there should no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake, those dayes shall be shortned.

23 *Then if any man shall say vnto you, Loe, heere is Christ, or there: beleeue it not. *Mar. 13. 21. luke 17. 23.

24 For there shall arise false Christs,

and false prophets, and shal shew great signes and wonders: insomuch that (if it were possible,) they shall deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say vnto you, Behold, he is in the desert, goe not foorth: Behold, he is in the secret chambers, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightening commeth out of the East, and shineth euen vnto the West: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

*Luke 17. 37.

28 *For wheresoeuer the carkeise is, there will the Eagles bee gathered together.

*Marke 13. 24. luke 21. 25. esay 13. 10. ioel 2. 31. ezek. 32. 7.

29 ¶ Immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, *shall the Sunne be darkned, and the Moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of the heauens shall be shaken.

*Reuel. 1. 7.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the Tribes of the earth mourne, *and they shall see the Sonne of man comming in the clouds of heauen, with power and great glory.

*1. Cor. 15. 52. 1. thes. 4. 16.

31 *And hee shall send his Angels with ||a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his Elect from the foure windes, from one end of heauen to the other.

|| *Or, with a Trumpet and a great voice.*

32 Now learne a parable of the figtree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth foorth leaues, yee know that Summer is nigh:

33 So likewise yee, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is neere, *euen* at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

*Mark. 13. 31.

35 *Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

*Gene. 7. luke 17. 26.

38 *For as in the dayes that were before the Flood, they were eating, and drinking, marrying, and giuing in mariage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knew not vntill the Flood came, and tooke them all away: so

shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

40 *Then shall two be in the field, the one shalbe taken, and the other left. *Luke 17. 36.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ *Watch therfore, for ye know not what houre your Lord doth come. *Mark. 13. 35.

43 *But know this, that if the good man of the house had knowen in what watch the thiefe would come, he would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be broken vp. *Luke 12. 39. 1. thes. 5. 2. reuel. 16. 15.

44 Therefore be yee also ready: for in such an houre as you thinke not, the sonne of man commeth.

45 *Who then is a faithfull and wise seruant, whom his Lord hath made ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them meat in due season? *Luke 12. 42.

46 Blessed is that seruant, whome his Lord when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, that hee shal make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But and if that euill seruant shal say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow seruants, and to eate and drinke with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that seruant shall come in a day when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that hee is not ware of:

51 And shall cut him ||asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. || *Or, cut him off.*

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the tenne Virgins, 14 and of the talents. 31 Also the description of the last Iudgement.

THen shall the kingdome of heauen be likened vnto ten Virgins, which tooke their lamps, & went forth to meet the bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue were foolish.

3 They that were foolish tooke their lampes, and tooke no oyle with them:

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.

5 While the bridegrome taried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth, goe ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said vnto the wise, Give vs of your oyle, for our lampes are ||gone out.

|| *Or, going out,*

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there be not ynough for vs and you, but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the doore was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgines, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, I know you not.

*Chap. 24. 42. marke 13. 33.

13 *Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day, nor the houre, wherein the Sonne of man commeth.

*Luke 19. 12.

14 ¶ *For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man trauailing into a farre countrey, who called his owne seruants, and deliuered vnto them his goods:

||*A talent is* 187. *pound* 10. *shillings, chap.* 18. 24.

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue ||talents, to another two, and to another one, to euery man according to his seuerall ability, & straightway tooke his iourney.

16 Then hee that had receiued the fiue talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them* other fiue talents.

17 And likewise he that had receiued two, he also gained other two.

18 But hee that had receiued one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lordes money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those seruants commeth, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so hee that had receiued fiue talents, came and brought other fiue talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents, behold, I haue gained besides them, fiue talents moe.

21 His lord said vnto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull seruant, thou hast been faithfull ouer a few things, I wil make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

22 He also that had receiued two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull

seruant, thou hast

beene faithfull ouer a few things, I wil make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came & said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sowen, & gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hidde thy talent in the earth: loe, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered, and said vnto him, Thou wicked and slouthfull seruant, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I haue not strawed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming I should haue receiued mine owne with vsurie.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

29 *For vnto euery one that hath shall be giuen, and he shall haue abundance: but from him that hath not, shal be taken away, euen that which he hath.

*Chap. 13. 12. marke 4. 25. luke 8. 18.

30 And cast yee the vnprofitable seruant into outer darkenesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Sonne of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall hee sit vpon the throne of his glory:

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepheard diuideth his sheepe from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the King say vnto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 *For I was an hungred, and yee gaue me meate: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in:

*Esai 58. 7. ezec. 18. 7

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sicke, and yee visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.

37 Then shal the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fedde thee? or thirstie, and gaue thee drinke?

38 When saw wee thee a stranger, and tooke thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it vnto me.

41 Then shall he say also vnto them on the left hand, *Depart from me, ye cursed, into euerlasting fire, prepared for the deuill and his angels.

*Psal. 6.8. chap. 7.23.

42 For I was an hungred, and yee gaue me no meat: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and yee tooke me not in: naked, and ye clothed mee not: sicke, and in prison, and yee visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, saying, Verely, I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And *these shall goe away into euerlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

*Dan. 12. 2 iohn 5. 29.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 6 The woman anointeth his feet. 14 Iudas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the Passeouer: 26 instituteth his holy Supper: 36 prayeth in the garden: 47 and being betrayed with a kisse, 57 is caried to Caiaphas, 69 and denied of Peter.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had finished al these sayings, hee said vnto his disciples,

2 *Ye know that after two dayes is the feast of the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man is betrayed to be crucified.

*Mar. 14. 1 luke 22. 1. iohn 13. 1.

3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people, vnto the palace of the high Priest, who was called Caiaphas,

*Ioh. 11. 47

4 And consulted that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there bee an vproare among the people.

6 ¶ *Now when Iesus was in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper,

*Mar. 14. 3 iohn 11. 1.

7 There came vnto him a woman, hauing an alabaster boxe of very precious ointment, and powred it on his head, as he sate at *meat.*

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose *is* this waste?

9 For this ointment might haue bin sold for much, and giuen to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstood it, he said vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

11 *For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me ye haue not alwayes. *Deu. 15. 11

12 For in that she hath powred this ointment on my body, shee did it for my buriall.

13 Verely I say vnto you, Wheresoeuer this Gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memoriall of her.

14 ¶ *Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests, *Marke 14. 10. luke 22. 3.

15 And said vnto them, What will ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they couenanted with him for thirtie pieces of siluer.

16 And from that time he sought opportunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ *Now the first day of the *feast of* vnleauened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the Passeouer? *Mar. 14. 12. luke 22. 7.

18 And he said, Goe into the citie to such a man, and say vnto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keepe the Passeouer at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did, as Iesus had appointed them, and they made ready the Passeouer.

20 *Now when the euen was come, he sate downe with the twelue. *Mark. 14. 18. luke 22. 14. ioh. 13. 21.

21 And as they did eate, he said, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shal betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began euery one of them to say vnto him, Lord, Is it I?

23 And he answered and said, *Hee that dippeth his hand with mee in the dish, the same shall betray me. *Psal. 41. 9.

24 The sonne of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe vnto that man by whom the sonne of man is betrayed:

It had bin good for that man, if hee had not bene borne.

25 Then Iudas, which betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, Is it I? He said vnto him, Thou hast said.

*1. Cor. 11 24.
||*Many Greeke copies haue, gaue thanks.*

26 ¶ And as they were eating, *Iesus took bread, and ||blessed it, and brake it, and gaue it to the Disciples, and said, Take, eate, this is my body.

27 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and gaue it to them, saying, Drinke ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you, I will not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the vine, vntill that day when I drinke it new with you in my fathers kingdom.

|| *Or, psalme.*

30 And when they had sung an ||hymne, they went out into the mount of Oliues.

*Marke 14. 27. iohn. 16. 32.
*Zach. 13. 7.

31 Then saith Iesus vnto them, *All ye shall be offended because of me this night, For it is written, *I will smite the Shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered abroad.

*Mar. 14. 28. and 16. 7.

32 But after I am risen againe, *I will goe before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered, and said vnto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I neuer be offended.

*Iohn 13. 38.

34 Iesus said vnto him, *Verily I say vnto thee, that this might before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise.

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not denie thee. Likewise also said all the Disciples.

*Marke 14 32. luke 22. 39.

36 ¶ *Then commeth Iesus with them vnto a place called Gethsemane, and saith vnto the Disciples, Sit yee heere, while I goe and pray yonder.

37 And hee tooke with him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and beganne to be sorrowful, and very heauie.

38 Then saith he vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowfull, euen vnto death: tary ye heere, & watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And he commeth vnto the Disciples, and findeth them asleepe, and saith vnto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that yee enter not into temptation: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh *is* weake.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep againe: For their eies were heauie.

44 And he left them, and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then commeth he to his Disciples, and saith vnto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest, behold, the houre is at hand, and the sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs be going: behold, he is at hand that doeth betray me.

47 ¶ And *while he yet spake, loe, Iudas one of the twelue came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues from the chiefe Priests and Elders of the people.

*Mar. 14. 43. luke 22. 47. iohn 18 3.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gaue them a signe, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith hee came to Iesus, and said, Haile master, and kissed him.

50 And Iesus said vnto him, Friend, Wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid handes on Iesus, and tooke him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a seruant of the high Priests, and smote off his eare.

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put vp againe thy sword into his place: *for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

*Gen. 9. 6. reuel. 13. 10.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my father, and he shall presently giue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

54 But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, *that thus it must be?

*Esai. 53. 10.

55 In that same houre said Iesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thiefe with swords and staues for to take mee? I sate daily with you teaching in the Temple, and ye laide no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the *Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the Disciples forsooke him, and fled:

*Lamen. 4. 20.

*Mark. 14. 53. luke 22. 54. iohn 18. 13.

57 ¶ *And they that had laid hold on Iesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off, vnto the high Priests palace, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

59 Now the chiefe Priests and Elders, and all the councell, sought false witnesse against Iesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

*Iohn 2. 19.

61 And said, This *fellow* said, *I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high Priest arose, and said vnto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it, which these witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the high Priest answered, and said vnto him, I adiure thee by the liuing God, that thou tell vs, whether thou bee the Christ the Sonne of God.

*Chap. 16. 27. 1. thess. 4. 16. rom. 14. 10.

64 Iesus saith vnto him, Thou hast saide: Neuerthelesse I say vnto you, *Hereafter shall yee see the Sonne of man sitting on the righthand of power, and comming in the clouds of heauen.

65 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemie: what further need haue wee of witnesses? Behold, now ye haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke ye? They answered and said, He is guiltie of death.

*Esay. 50. 6.
‖Or, *rods*.

67 *Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him, and others smote him with ‖the palmes of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophecie vnto vs, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

*Mark. 14. 66. luke 22. 55. iohn 18. 25.

69 ¶ *Now Peter sate without in the palace: and a damosell came vnto him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galilee.

70 But hee denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou saiest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maide saw him, and saide vnto them that were there, This fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe hee denied with an oath, I doe not know the man.

73 And after a while came vnto him

they that stood by, and saide to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then beganne hee to curse and to sweare, *saying*, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Iesus, which said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrice. And hee went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ is deliuered bound to Pilate. 3 Iudas hangeth himselfe. 19 Pilate admonished of his wife, 24 washeth his hands: 26 and looseth Barabbas. 29 Christ is crowned with thornes, 34 crucified, 40 reuiled, 50 dieth, and is buried: 66 his Sepulchre is sealed, and watched.

WHen the morning was come, *all the chiefe Priests and Elders of the people, tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death. *Mark. 15. 1. luke 22. 66. ioh. 18. 28.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and deliuered him to Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then Iudas, which had betraied him, when he saw that hee was condemned, repented himselfe, and brought againe the thirtie pieces of siluer to the chiefe Priests and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned, in that I haue betraied the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to vs? see thou to that.

5 And hee cast downe the pieces of siluer in the Temple, *and departed, and went and hanged himselfe. *Act. 1. 18.

6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasurie, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them the potters field, to burie strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, *The field of blood vnto this day. *Acts. 1. 19.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *And they tooke the thirtie pieces of siluer, the price of him that was valued, ||whom they of the children of Israel did value: *Zach. 11. 12. || *Or, whom they bought of the children of Israel.*

10 And gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.)

11 And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying; Art thou the King of the

Iewes? And Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when hee was accused of the chiefe Priests and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to neuer a word: insomuch that the Gouernour marueiled greatly.

*Luke 23. 17.

15 *Now at *that* feast the Gouernor was woont to release vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whom will ye that I release vnto you? Barabbas, or Iesus, which is called Christ?

18 For hee knew that for enuie they had deliuered him.

19 ¶ When he was set downe on the Iudgement seate, his wife sent vnto him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame, because of him.

*Iohn 18. 40. actes 3. 14.

20 *But the chiefe Priestes and Elders perswaded the multitude that they should aske Barabbas, & destroy Iesus.

21 The Gouernour answered, and said vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I release vnto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate said vnto them, What shall I doe then with Iesus, which is called Christ? They all sayde vnto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the Gouernour said, Why, what euil hath he done? But they cried out ẏ more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could preuaile nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, hee tooke water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this iust person: see yee to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood *be* on vs, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released hee Barabbas vnto them, and when he had scourged Iesus, he deliuered him to be crucified.

*Ioh. 19. 1.

27 *Then the souldiers of the Gouernour tooke Iesus into the ||common hall, and gathered vnto him the whole band *of souldiers*.

||*Or, gouernours house.*

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crowne of thornes, they put it vpon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Haile king of the Iewes.

30 And they spit vpon him, and tooke the reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they tooke the robe off from him, and put his owne raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 *And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to beare his Crosse.

*Marke 15. 21. luke 23. 26.

33 *And when they were come vnto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

*Iohn 19. 17.

34 ¶ They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and when hee had tasted thereof, hee would not drinke.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, *They parted my garments among them, and vpon my vesture did they cast lots.

*Psal. 22. 18.

36 And sitting downe, they watched him there:

37 And set vp ouer his head, his accusation written, *THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.*

38 Then were there two theeues crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the Temple, & buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: If thou be the Sonne of God, come downe from the Crosse.

41 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, said,

42 He saued others, himselfe he cannot saue: If he be the King of Israel, let him now come downe from the Crosse, and we will beleeue him.

43 *He trusted in God, let him deliuer him now if hee will haue him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God.

*Psal. 22. 8. wisd. 2. 15, 16.

44 The thieues also which were crucified with him, cast ye same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixth houre there was darkenesse ouer all the land vnto the ninth houre.

D 46

46 And about the ninth houre, Iesus cried with a loud voyce, saying, *Eli*, *Eli*, *Lamasabachthani*, that is to say, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken mee?

*Psal. 22. 1.

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and tooke a spunge, *and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

*Psa. 69. 22

49 The rest said, Let bee, let vs see whether Elias will come to saue him.

50 ¶ Iesus, when hee had cried againe with a loud voice, yeelded vp the ghost.

51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent.

52 And the graues were opened, and many bodies of Saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were with him, watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, & those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding afarre off) which followed Iesus from Galilee, ministring vnto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, & Mary the mother of Iames and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 *When the Euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who also himselfe was Iesus disciple:

*Mar. 15. 42. luk. 23. 50. ioh. 19. 38.

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus: then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

59 And when Ioseph had taken the body, hee wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And laide it in his owne newe tombe, which he had hewen out in the rocke: and he rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the

preparation, the chiefe

Priests and Pharisees came together vnto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiuer said, while he was yet aliue, After three daies I wil rise againe.

64 Command therfore that the sepulchre be made sure, vntill the third day, lest his disciples come by night, & steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last errour shalbe worse then the first.

65 Pilate said vnto them, Yee haue a watch, goe your way, make it as sure as you can.

66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Christs resurrection is declared by an Angel, to the women. 9 He himselfe appeareth vnto them. 11 The high Priests giue the souldiers money to say that he was stollen out of his sepulchre. 16 Christ appeareth to his disciples, 19 and sendeth them to baptize and teach all Nations.

IN the *ende of the Sabbath, as it began to dawne towards the first day of the weeke, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre. *Mar. 16. 1 iohn 20. 1.

2 And behold, there ||was a great earthquake, for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it. ||*Or, had bin*

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snowe.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the Angel answered, and said vnto the women, Feare not ye: for I know that ye seeke Iesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as hee said: Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And goe quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead. And behold, hee goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him: loe, I haue told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Iesus met them, saying, All haile. And they came, and held him

by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid: Goe tell my brethren that they goe into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the chiefe Priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the gouernours eares, wee will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they tooke the money, and did

¶ The Gospel according

CHAP. I.

1 The office of Iohn the Baptist. 9 Iesus is baptized, 12 tempted, 14 he preacheth: 16 calleth Peter, Andrew, Iames and Iohn: 23 healeth one that had a deuill, 29 Peters mother in law, 32 many diseased persons, 41 and cleanseth the Leper.

THe beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God,

* Mala. 3. 1.

2 As it is written in the Prophets, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

* Esa. 40. 3. luke 3. 4. iohn 1. 23.

3 *The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

* Matt. 3. 1.
|| *Or, vnto.*

4 *Iohn did baptize in the wildernesse, and preach the baptisme of repentance, ||for the remission of sinnes.

* Matt. 3. 5.

5 *And there went out vnto him all the land of Iudea, and they of Ierusalem, and were all baptized of him in the riuer of Iordane, cōfessing their sinnes.

as they were taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the Iewes vntill this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountaine where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, All power is giuen vnto me in heauen and in earth.

19 ¶ *Goe ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghost: *Mark. 16. 15.

20 Teaching them to obserue all things, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe, I am with you alway, euen vnto the end of the world. Amen.

to S. Marke.

6 And Iohn was *clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of a skin about his loines: and he did eat locusts and wilde honie, *Matt. 3. 4.

7 And preached, saying, There commeth one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shooes I am not worthy to stoupe downe, and vnloose.

8 I indeed haue baptized you with water: but hee shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 *And it came to passe in those daies, that Iesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordane. *Matth. 3. 13.

10 And straightway comming vp out of the water, hee saw the heauens ‖opened, and the Spirit like a doue descending vpon him. ‖ *Or, clouen, or rent.*

11 And there came a voice from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 *And immediately the Spirit driueth him into the wildernesse. *Matt. 4. 1.

13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourtie daies tempted of Satan, and was with the wildbeasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

14 Now after that Iohn was put

D 2 in

*Matth. 4. 12. in prison, *Iesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospell of the kingdome of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye, and beleeue the Gospell.

*Matth. 4. 18. 16 *Now as he walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)

17 And Iesus said vnto them, Come ye after me; and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when hee had gone a little further thence, hee saw Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired seruants, and went after him.

*Matth. 4. 13. 21 *And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

*Matth. 7. 28. 22 *And they were astonished at his doctrine: for hee taught them as one that had authority, and not as the Scribes.

*Luke 4. 33. 23 *And there was in their Synagogue a man with an vncleane spirit, and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the vncleane spirit had torne him, and cried with a lowd voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amased, insomuch that they questioned among themselues, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authoritie commandeth he euen the vncleane spirits, and they doe obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad throughout al the region round about Galilee.

*Matth. 8. 14. 29 *And forthwith, when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with Iames and Iohn.

30 But Simons wiues mother lay

sicke of a feuer: and anone they tell him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lift her vp, and immediately the feuer left her, and she ministred vnto them.

32 And at euen, when the Sunne did set, they brought vnto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with diuels:

33 And all the citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases, and cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils ||to speake, because they knew him.

|| *Or, to say that they knew him.*

35 And in the morning, rising vp a great while before day, hee went out, and departed into a solitarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him:

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said vnto them, Let vs goe into yͤ next townes, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I foorth.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out deuils.

40 *And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

*Matth. 8. 2

41 And Iesus mooued with compassion, put foorth his hand, and touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away,

44 And saith vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy clensing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony vnto them.

45 *But he went out, and beganne to publish it much, and to blase abroad the matter: insomuch that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from euery quarter.

*Luke 5. 15.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ healeth one sicke of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew from the receit of Custome,

15 eateth with Publicanes, and sinners, 18 excuseth his disciples for not fasting, 23 and for plucking the eares of corne on the Sabbath day.

*Matt. 9. 1.

ANd againe *hee entred into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noysed that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no roome to receiue *them*, no not so much as about the doore: and he preached the word vnto them.

3 And they come vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsie, which was borne of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for preasse, they vncouered the roofe where he was: and when they had broken it vp, they let downe the bed wherin the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Iesus saw their faith, hee said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

*Iob 14. 4. esay 43. 25.

7 Why doeth this man thus speake blasphemies? *Who can forgiue sinnes but God onely?

8 And immediatly, when Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that they so reasoned within themselues, he said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed and walke?

10 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (Hee saith to the sicke of the palsie,)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, & take vp thy bed, & goe thy way into thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, tooke vp the bed, and went foorth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, Wee neuer saw it on this fashion.

*Matt. 9. 9.

|| *Or, at the place where the Custome was receiued.*

13 And he went foorth againe by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

14 *And as he passed by, he saw Leui the son of Alpheus sitting ||at the receit of Custome, and said vnto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

15 And it came to passe, that as Iesus sate at meate in his house, many

Publicanes and sinners sate also together with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many, & they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eate with Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it that hee eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 When Iesus heard it, he saith vnto them, They that are whole, haue no need of the Physition, but they that are sicke: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

18 *And the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees vsed to fast; and they come, and say vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

*Matth. 9. 14 luke 5. 32.

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the Bridegrome is with them? As long as they haue the Bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegrome shall bee taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 No man also soweth a piece of ||new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it vp, taketh away from the old, & the rent is made worse.

|| *Or, raw, or vnwrought.*

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new wine doeth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will bee marred: But new wine must bee put into new bottles.

23 *And it came to passe, that he went thorow the corne fields on the Sabbath day, & his disciples began as they went, to plucke the eares of corne.

*Matt. 12. 1.

24 And the Pharisees saide vnto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said vnto them, Haue ye neuer read what Dauid did, when hee had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How hee went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the high Priest, and did eate the Shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eate, but for the Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him?

27 And hee said vnto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath:

28 Therefore the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ healeth the withered hand, 10 and many other infirmities: 11 Rebuketh the vncleane spirits: 13 Chooseth his twelue Apostles: 22 Conuinceth the blasphemie of casting out deuils by Beelzebub: 31 and sheweth who are his brother, sister and mother.

*Mat. 12. 9

AND *he entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand:

2 And they watched him, whether hee would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith vnto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And hee saith vnto them, Is it lawfull to doe good on the Sabbath dayes, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieued for the ||hardnesse of their hearts, He saith vnto the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

||*Or, blindnesse.*

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway tooke counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus withdrew himselfe with his disciples to the Sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Iordane, and they about Tyre & Sydon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ||preassed vpon him, for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

||*Or, rushed*

11 And vncleane spirits, when they saw him, fell downe before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him knowen.

*Matt. 10. 1

13 *And he goeth vp into a mountaine, and calleth vnto him whom he would: and they came vnto him.

14 And he ordeined twelue, that they should be with him,

and that hee might

send them foorth to preach:

15 And to haue power to heale sickenesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And Iames *the sonne* of Zebedee, and Iohn the brother of Iames (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sonnes of thunder.)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went ||into an house.

|| *Or, home.*

20 And the multitude commeth together againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his ||friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himselfe.

|| *Or, kinsemen.*

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, *He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the deuils, casteth he out deuils.

*Mat. 9. 34

23 And he called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, Howe can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise vp against himselfe, and be diuided, hee cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoile his house.

28 *Verely I say vnto you, All sinnes shalbe forgiuen vnto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies, wherewith soeuer they shall blaspheme:

*Matt. 12. 31.

29 But he that shal blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath neuer forgiuenesse, but is in danger of eternall damnation.

30 Because they said, He hath an vncleane spirit.

31 ¶ *There came then his brethren, and his mother, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling him.

*Mat. 12. 46.

32 And the multitude sate about him and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seeke for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sate about him, and saide, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 21 We must communicate the light of our knowledge to others. 26 The parable of the seede growing secretly, 30 and of the Mustard seede. 35 Christ stilleth the tempest on the Sea.

*Matth. 13. 1.

AND *he beganne againe to teach by the Sea side: and there was gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate in the Sea: and the whole multitude was by the Sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the foules of the aire came, & deuoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth: and immediately it sprang vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the Sunne was vp, it was scorched, and because it had no roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruite.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruite that sprang vp, and increased, and brought foorth some thirtie, & some sixtie, & some an hundred.

9 And he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when hee was alone, they that were about him, with the twelue, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said vnto them, Vnto you it is giuen to know the mystery of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

*Matth. 13. 14.

12 *That seeing they may see, and not perceiue, and hearing they may heare, and not vnderstand, lest at any time they should be conuerted, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them.

13 And he said vnto them, Know ye

not this parable? And how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The Sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they haue heard, Satan commeth immediately, and taketh away the word that was sowen in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowen on stonie ground, who when they haue heard the word, immediately receiue it with gladnesse:

17 And haue no roote in themselues, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sowen among thorns: such as heare the word,

19 And the cares of this world, *and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becommeth vnfruitfull.

*1. Tim. 6. 17.

20 And these are they which are sowen on good ground, such as heare the word, and receiue it, & bring foorth fruit, some thirty fold, some sixtie, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ *And he said vnto them, Is a candle brought to be put vnder a ||bushell, or vnder a bed? & not to be set on a candlesticke?

*Matth. 5. 15.

||*The word, in the originall, signifieth a lesse measure as Mat.* 5. 15.

22 *For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And he said vnto them, Take heed what you heare: *With what measure ye mete, it shalbe measured to you: And vnto you that heare, shal more be giuen.

*Matth. 10. 26.

*Matth. 7. 2.

25 *For he that hath, to him shall be giuen: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken, euen that which he hath.

*Matth. 13. 12.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede into the ground,

27 And should sleepe, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring, and grow vp, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth foorth fruite of herselfe, first the blade, then the eare, after that the full corne in the eare.

29 But when the fruite is ||brought foorth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the haruest is come.

||*Or, ripe.*

30 ¶ And he said, *Wherunto shal we liken the kingdome of God? Or with

*Matth. 13. 31.

what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seed: which when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse then all the seedes that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sowen, it groweth vp, and becommeth greater then all herbes, & shooteth out great branches, so that the fowles of the aire may lodge vnder the shadow of it.

*Matth. 13. 34. 33 *And with many such parables spake hee the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without a parable spake he not vnto them, and when they were alone, hee expounded all things to his disciples.

*Matth. 8. 23. 35 *And the same day, when the Euen was come, he saith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they tooke him, euen as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other litle ships.

37 And there arose a great storme of wind, and the waues beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleepe on a pillow: and they awake him, and say vnto him, Master, carest thou not, that we perish?

39 And hee arose, and rebuked the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, be still: and the winde ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? How is it that you haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and saide one to another, What maner of man is this, that euen the winde and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 Christ deliuering the possessed of the Legion of deuils, 13 They enter into the swine, 25 Hee healeth the woman of the bloody issue, 35 and raiseth from death Iairus his daughter.

*Matth. 8. 28. AND *they came ouer vnto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes.

2 And when hee was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him out of the tombes, a man with an vncleane spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines:

4 Because that hee had bene often bound with fetters and chaines, and the chaines had bene plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day, hee was in the mountaines, and in the tombes, crying, and cutting himselfe with stones.

6 But when hee saw Iesus afarre off, he came and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a lowd voice, and said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adiure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And hee answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And hee besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there nigh vnto the mountaines a great herd of swine, feeding.

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ranne violently downe a steepe place into the sea (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Iesus, and see him that was possessed with the deuill, and had the Legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, tolde them how it befell to him that was possessed with the deuill, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when hee was come into the ship, he that had bene possessed with the deuill prayed him that hee might bee with him.

19 Howbeit Iesus suffered him not, but saith vnto him, Goe home to thy friends, and tel them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath

had compassion on thee.

20 And hee departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Iesus had done for him: and all men did marueile.

21 And when Iesus was passed ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and he was nigh vnto the Sea.

*Mat. 9. 18.

22 *And behold, there commeth one of the Rulers of the Synagogue, Iairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feete,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My litle daughter lieth at the point of death, *I pray thee* come and lay thy hands on her, that shee may be healed, and she shall liue.

24 And Iesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certaine woman which had an issue of blood twelue yeeres,

26 And had suffered many things of many Physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When shee had heard of Iesus, came in the prease behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shalbe whole.

29 And straightway the fountaine of her blood was dried vp: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Iesus immediatly knowing in himselfe that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell downe before him, and tolde him all the trueth.

34 And he said vnto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While hee yet spake, there came from the Ruler of the Synagogues *house*, certaine which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoone as Iesus heard the word that was spoken, he

saith vnto the Ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleeue.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, saue Peter, & Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 And hee commeth to the house of the Ruler of the Synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, hee saith vnto them, Why make yee this adoe, and weepe? the damosell is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne: but when he had put them all out, hee taketh the father and the mother of the damosell, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damosell was lying.

41 And he tooke the damosell by the hand, and said vnto her, *Talitha cumi*, which is, being interpreted, Damosell (I say vnto thee) Arise.

42 And straightway the damosell arose, and walked, for shee was of the age of twelue yeeres: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And hee charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that some thing should be giuen her to eate.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countreymen. 7 He giueth the twelue power ouer vncleane spirits. 14 Diuers opinions of Christ. 18 Iohn Baptist is beheaded, 29 and buried. 30 The Apostles returne from preaching. 34 The miracle of fiue loaues and two fishes. 45 Christ walketh on the Sea: 53 And healeth all that touch him.

AND *hee went out from thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples follow him. *Mat. 13. 54.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? And what wisedome is this which is giuen vnto him, that euen such mightie workes are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the sonne of Mary, the brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda, and Simon? And are not his sisters heere with vs? And they were offended at him.

4 But Iesus sayde vnto them, *A Pro-

*Iohn 4. 44

*A Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kinne, and in his owne house.

5 And he could there doe no mightie worke, saue that he laid his hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed them.

*Mat. 9. 35 luke 13. 22.

6 And he marueiled because of their vnbeliefe. *And he went round about the villages, teaching.

*Mat. 10. 1.

7 ¶ *And he calleth vnto him the twelue, and began to send them foorth, by two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their iourney, saue a staffe onely: no scrip, no bread, no ||money in their purse:

|| *The word signifieth a piece of brasse money, in value somewhat lesse then a farthing, mat.* 10. 9. *but here it is taken in generall for mony.*

9 But be shod with sandales: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said vnto them, In what place soeuer yee enter into an house, there abide til ye depart from that place.

*Mat. 10. 14

*Act. 13. 51

11 *And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when yee depart thence, *shake off the dust vnder your feet, for a testimonie against them: Verely I say vnto you, it shalbe more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

*Iam. 5. 14.

13 And they cast out many deuils, *and anointed with oyle many, that were sicke, and healed them.

*Mat. 14. 1

14 *And king Herod heard *of him* (for his name was spread abroad:) and hee said that Iohn the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mightie workes doe shew foorth themselues in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.

*Luk. 3. 19

16 *But when Herod heard *thereof*, he said, It is Iohn, whome I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth and laid hold vpon Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, for hee had maried her.

*Leuit. 18. 16.

18 For Iohn had said vnto Herod, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

||*Or, an inward grudge*

19 Therfore Herodias had ||a quarrel against him, & would haue killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he was a iust man, and an holy,

and ||obserued him: and when he heard him, hee did many things, and heard him gladly.

|| *Or, kept him or saued him.*

21 And when a conuenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captaines, and chiefe estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate with him, the king said vnto the damosell, Aske of me whatsoeuer thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, and said vnto her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, The head of Iohn yͤ Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste, vnto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou giue me by and by in a charger, the head of Iohn the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sory, *yet* for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate with him, hee would not reiect her.

27 And immediatly the king sent ||an executioner, and commaunded his head to be brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison,

|| *Or, one of his guard.*

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the damosell, and the damosell gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and tooke vp his corpse, and laid it in a tombe.

30 *And the Apostles gathered themselues together vnto Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

*Luk. 9. 10

31 And he said vnto them, Come yee your selues apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many comming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eate.

32 *And they departed into a desert place by ship priuately.

*Mat. 14. 13.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together vnto him.

34 *And Iesus when he came out, saw much people, and was moued with compassion toward them, because they were as sheepe not hauing a shepherd: and hee beganne to teach them many things.

*Mat. 6. 39.

35 *And

*Matth. 14. 15.

35 *And when the day was now far spent, his Disciples came vnto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is farre passed.

36 Send them away, that they may goe into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselues bread: for they haue nothing to eate.

37 He answered and said vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they say vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hundred ||penniworth of bread, and giue them to eate?

|| *The Rom. penie is seuen pence halfe penie as Mat.* 18. 28

38 He saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? goe, and see. And when they knew, they say, Fiue, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit downe by companies vpon the greene grasse.

40 And they sate downe in rankes by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, he looked vp to heauen, and blessed, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes diuided he among them all.

42 And they did all eate, and were filled.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eate of the loaues, were about fiue thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to goe to the other side before ||vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

|| *Or, ouer against Bethsaida.*

46 And when hee had sent them away, he departed into a mountaine to pray.

*Matth. 14 23.

47 *And when Euen was come, the ship was in the midst of the Sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing (for the wind was contrary vnto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, he commeth vnto them, walking vpon the Sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the Sea, they supposed it had bene a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediately hee talked with them, and saith vnto them, Be of good cheere, It is I, be not afraid.

51 And hee went vp vnto them into

the ship, and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselues beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaues, for their heart was hardened.

53 *And when they had passed ouer, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore. *Matth. 14. 34.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and beganne to carrie about in beds, those that were sicke, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersouer he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrie, they laide the sicke in the streetes, & besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ||him, were made whole. ||*Or, it.*

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharises find fault at the disciples for eating with vnwashen hands. 8 They breake the commandement of God, by the traditions of men. 4 Meate defileth not the man. 24 Hee healeth the Syrophenician womans daughter of an vncleane spirit, 31 and one that was deafe, and stammered in his speach.

T*Hen came together vnto him the Pharises, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Hierusalem. *Matth. 15 1.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eate bread with ||defiled (that is to say, with vnwashen) hands, they found fault. ||*Or, common.*

3 For the Pharises and all the Iewes, except they wash their hands ||oft, eate not, holding the tradition of the elders. ||*Or, diligently, in the Originall, with the fist: Theophilact, vp to the elbowe.*

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eate not. And many other things there be, which they haue receiued to hold, *as* the washing of cups and ||pots, brasen vessels, and of ||tables. ||*Or, beds.* ||*Sextarius, is about a pinte and an halfe.*

5 Then the Pharises and Scribes asked him, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate bread with vnwashen hands?

6 He answered and said vnto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you Hypocrites, as it is written, *This people honoureth mee with their lips, but their heart is farre from me. Esai. 29. 13. mat. 15. 8.

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they wor-

ship me, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

8 For laying aside the Commandement of God, yee hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots, and cups: and many other such like things ye doe.

||*Or, frustrate.*

9 And he said vnto them, Full well ye ||reiect the Commandement of God, that ye may keepe your owne tradition.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father & thy mother: and who so curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is *Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoeuer thou mightest be profited by me: *he shalbe free.*

*Matth. 15. 5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to doe ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye haue deliuered: And many such like things doe ye.

*Matt. 15. 10.

14 ¶ *And when he had called all the people vnto him, hee said vnto them, Hearken vnto me euery one of you, and vnderstand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him, can defile him: but the things which come out of of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when hee was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith vnto them, Are ye so without vnderstanding also? Doe yee not perceiue that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which commeth out of the man, that defileth the man.

*Gen. 6. 5. and 8. 21.

21 *For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

*Matth. 15. 19.

22 *Thefts, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciuiousnesse, an euill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse:

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile the man.

*Matt. 15. 21.

24 ¶ *And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would haue no man know it, but hee could not be hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose yong daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feete.

26 (The woman was a ||Greeke, a Syrophenician by nation:) and she besought him that he would cast forth the deuill out of her daughter.

|| *Or, Gentile.*

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto the dogges.

28 And she answered and said vnto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogges vnder the table eat of the childrens crummes.

29 And hee said vnto her, For this saying, goe thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when shee was come to her house, she found the deuill gone out, and her daughter laied vpon the bed.

31 ¶ And againe departing from the coastes of Tyre and Sidon, he came vnto the sea of Galilee, thorow the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring vnto him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand vpon him.

33 And he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and he spit, and touched his tongue,

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and saith vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And hee charged them that they should tell no man: but the more hee charged them, so much the more a great deale they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, Hee hath done all things well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously: 10 refuseth to giue a signe to the Pharisees: 14 admonisheth his disciples to beware of the leuen of the Pharisees, and of the leuen of Herode: 22 giueth a blinde man his sight: 27 acknowledgeth that hee is the Christ, who should suffer and rise againe: 34 and exhorteth to patience in persecution for the profession of the Gospel.

In

*Mat. 15. 32.

IN those dayes *the multitude being very great, and hauing nothing to eat, Iesus called his disciples vnto him, & saith vnto them,

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now bene with me three daies, and haue nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they will faint by the way: for diuers of them came from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And hee asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said, Seuen.

6 And he commanded the people to sit downe on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thanks, and brake, and gaue to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commaunded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eate, and were filled: and they tooke vp, of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand, and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

*Mat. 16. 1

11 *And the Pharisees came foorth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deepely in his spirit, and saith, Why doeth this generation seeke after a signe? Verely I say vnto you, There shall no signe be giuen vnto this generation.

13 And he left them, & entring into the ship againe, departed to the other side.

*Mat. 16. 5.

14 ¶ *Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loafe.

15 And hee charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the leauen of Herode.

*Mat. 16. 7.

16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is*, *because we haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew *it*, he saith vnto them, Why reason ye, because yee haue no bread? Perceiue ye not yet, nei-

ther vnderstand? Haue yee your heart yet hardened?

18 Hauing eyes, see ye not? and hauing eares heare ye not? And doe ye not remember?

19 When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thousand, how many baskets full of fragments tooke yee vp? They say vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when the seuen among foure thousand: how many baskets full of fragments tooke ye vp? And they said, Seuen.

21 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye doe not vnderstand?

22 ¶ And he commeth to Bethsaida, and they bring a blind man vnto him, and besought him to touch him:

23 And he tooke the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and when he had spit on his eyes, & put his hands vpon him, he asked him, if hee saw ought.

24 And he looked vp, and saide, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that hee put his handes againe vpon his eies, and made him look vp: and he was restored, and saw euery man clearely.

26 And hee sent him away to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

27 ¶ *And Iesus went out, and his disciples, into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am? *Mat. 16. 13.

28 And they answered, Iohn the Baptist: but some say, Elias: & others, one of the Prophets.

29 And hee saith vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? And Peter answereth and saith vnto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And hee beganne to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders, and of the chiefe Priests, & Scribes, and be killed, & after three dayes rise againe.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him, and beganne to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, & looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou sauourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men

34 ¶ And when he had called the people vnto him, with his disciples also, he said vnto them, *Whosoeuer will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow mee.

*Matt. 10. 38.

35 For whosoeuer will saue his life shall lose it, but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, the same shall saue it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule?

37 Or what shall a man giue in exchange for his soule?

38 *Whosoeuer therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Sonne of man bee ashamed, when he commeth in the glory of his Father, with the holy Angels.

*Mat. 10. 33.

CHAP. IX.

2 Iesus is transfigured. 11 Hee instructeth his disciples, concerning the comming of Elias: 14 casteth forth a dumbe, and deafe spirit: 30 foretelleth his death and resurrection: 33 exhorteth his disciples to humilitie: 38 bidding them, not to prohibite such as be not against thē, nor to giue offence to any of the faithfull.

AND hee said vnto them, *Verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shal not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power.

*Mat. 16. 28.

2 ¶ *And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an high mountaine apart by themselues: and he was transfigured before them.

Mat. 17. 1.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no Fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Iesus.

5 And Peter answered, and saide to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to bee here, and let vs make three Tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that ouershadowed them: and a voyce came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

8 And suddenly when they had loo-

ked round about, they saw no man any more, saue Iesus only with themselues.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them that they should tell no man, what things they had seene, till the Sonne of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselues, questioning one with another, what the rising from the dead should meane.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered, and told them, Elias verely commeth first, and restoreth al things, and *how it is written of the Sonne of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. *Esai. 53. 23

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ *And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them. *Mat. 17. 14.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, & running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the Scribes, What question ye ‖with them? ‖*Or, among your selues.*

17 And one of the multitude answered, and said, Master, I haue broughe vnto thee my son, which hath a dumbe spirit:

18 And wheresoeuer he taketh him, he ‖teareth him, & he fometh, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not. ‖*Or, dasheth him.*

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithlesse generation, how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you? Bring him vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fel on the ground, and wallowed, foming.

21 And he asked his father, Howe long is it agoe since this came vnto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, haue compassion on vs, and helpe vs.

23 Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out and said with teares, Lord, I beleeue, helpe thou mine vnbeliefe.

25 When Iesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foule spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumbe and deafe spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the *spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke him by the hand, and lifted him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him priuately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And hee said vnto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer, and fasting.

*Mat. 17. 30 ¶ *And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee,
22. and he would not yͭ any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

*Mat. 18. 33 ¶ *And he came to Capernaum; and being in the
1. house, he asked them, What was it that yee disputed among
your selues by the way?

34 But they held their peace: For by the way they had disputed among themselues, who *should be* the greatest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and saith vnto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant of all.

36 And he tooke a child, and set him in the midst of them: & when he had taken him in his arms, he said vnto them,

37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such children in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.

*Luke 9. 38 ¶ *And Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we saw
49. one casting out deuils in thy Name, and he followeth not vs,
and we forbade him, because he followeth not vs.

*1. Cor. 39 But Iesus said, Forbid him not, *for there is no man,
12. 3. which shall doe a miracle in my Name, that can lightly
speake euill of me.

40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.

41 *For whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke in my Name, because yee belong to Christ: Verily I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.

*Mat. 10. 42.

42 *And whosoeuer shall offend one of these litle ones that beleeue in me, it is better for him, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and he were cast into the Sea.

*Mat. 18. 6.

43 *And if thy hand ||offend thee, cut it off: It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then hauing two hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched:

*Mat. 5. 29 and 18. 8.

|| *Or, cause thee to offend.*

44 *Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

*Esai. 66. 24.

45 And if thy foote offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then hauing two feete, to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched:

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye ||offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hel fire:

|| *Or, cause thee to offend.*

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For euery one shall be salted with fire, *and euery sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

*Leuit. 2. 13.

50 *Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

*Mat. 5. 13.

CHAP. X.

2 Christ disputeth with the Pharisees, touching diuorcement: 13 blesseth the children that are brought vnto him: 17 resolueth a rich man how he may inherite life euerlasting: 23 telleth his disciples of the danger of riches: 28 promiseth rewards to them that forsake any thing for the Gospell: 32 Foretelleth his death, & resurrection: 35 Biddeth the two ambitious suiters to thinke rather of suffring with him: 46 And restoreth to Bartimeus his sight.

A*Nd he rose from thence, & commeth into the coasts of Iudea by the farther side of Iordan: and the people resort vnto him againe, and as he was wont, he taught them againe.

*Mat. 19. 1.

2 ¶ And the Pharises came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man

to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered, and saide vnto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnesse of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male, and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leaue his father and mother, and cleaue to his wife,

8 And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so then they are no more twaine, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of the same matter.

*Matth. 5. 32. and 19. 9.

11 And he saith vnto them, *Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and bee married to another, she committeth adulterie.

*Matth. 19. 13.

13 ¶ *And they brought yong children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Iesus saw it, hee was much displeased, and said vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verily I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein.

16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, put his handes vpon them, and blessed them.

*Matth. 19. 16.

17 ¶ *And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what shall I doe that I may inherit eternall life?

18 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? There is no man good, but one, *that is* God.

19 Thou knowest the Commandements, Doe not commit adulterie, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father, and mother.

20 And hee answered, and saide vn-

to him, Master, all these haue I obserued from my youth.

21 Then Iesus beholding him, loued him, and said vnto him, One thing thou lackest; Goe thy way, sell whatsoeuer thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, take vp the crosse & folow me.

22 And hee was sad at that saying, and went away grieued: for hee had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Iesus looked round about, and saith vnto his disciples, How hardly shall they that haue riches enter into the kingdome of God?

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Iesus answereth againe, and saith vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God?

25 It is easier for a camel to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 And Iesus looking vpon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ *Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue left all, and haue followed thee. *Matth. 19. 27.

29 And Iesus answered, and said, Verily I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the Gospels,

30 But hee shall receiue an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternall life:

31 *But many *that* are first, shall be last: and the last, first. *Matth. 19. 30.

32 ¶ *And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem: and Iesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he tooke againe the twelue, and began to tell them what things should happen vnto him, *Matth. 20. 17.

33 Saying, Behold, we go vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be deliuered vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit vpon him, and shall kil him, and the third day he shall rise againe.

*Matth. 20. 20.

35 ¶ *And Iames, and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedee come vnto him, saying, Master, we would yͭ thou shouldest do for vs whatsoeuer we shall desire.

36 And hee saide vnto them, What would ye that I should doe for you?

37 They said vnto him, Grant vnto vs that wee may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Yee know not what ye aske: Can ye drinke of the cup that I drinke of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they said vnto him, Wee can. And Iesus said vnto them, Ye shall indeed drinke of the cup that I drinke of: and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to giue, but it shall be giuen to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they beganne to bee much displeased with Iames and Iohn.

*Luke 22. 25.

|| *Or, thinke good.*

42 But Iesus called them to him, and saith vnto them, *Yee know that they which ||are accompted to rule ouer the Gentiles, exercise Lordship ouer them: and their great ones exercise authoritie vpon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoeuer will bee great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whosoeuer of you will bee the chiefest, shalbe seruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to bee ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.

*Matth. 20. 29.

46 ¶ *And they came to Iericho: and as he went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great number of people; blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sate by the high wayes side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Iesus thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

48 And many charged him, that he should hold his peace: But he cried the more a great deale, Thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

49 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to bee called: and they call the blinde man, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And hee casting away his garment, rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I should doe vnto thee? The blinde man said vnto him, Lord, that I might receiue my sight.

52 And Iesus saide vnto him, Goe thy way, thy faith hath ‖made thee whole: And immediatly hee receiued his sight, & followed Iesus in the way. ‖ *Or, saued thee.*

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Hierusalem: 12 curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree: 15 purgeth the Temple: 20 exhorteth his disciples to stedfastnesse of faith, and to forgiue their enemies: 27 and defendeth the lawfulnes of his actions, by the witnesse of Iohn, who was a man sent of God.

AND when they came nigh to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the mount of Oliues, hee sendeth foorth two of his disciples, *Matth. 21. 1.

2 And saith vnto them, Goe your way into the village ouer against you, and assoone as ye bee entred into it, yee shall finde a colt tied, whereon neuer man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe yee this? Say yee, that the Lord hath need of him: and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certaine of them that stood there, said vnto them, What doe ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said vnto them euen as Iesus had commanded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the colt to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, *Hosanna*, blessed is hee that commeth in

the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father Dauid, that commeth in the Name of the Lord, *Hosanna* in the highest.

11 And Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple, and when hee had looked round about vpon all things, & now the euentide was come, he went out vnto Bethanie with the twelue.

12 ¶ And on the morow when they were come from Bethanie, hee was hungry.

*Matt. 21. 19. 13 *And seeing a figtree a farre off, hauing leaues, hee came, if haply hee might find any thing thereon, & when he came to it, hee found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not *yet*.

14 And Iesus answered, and said vnto it, No man eate fruite of thee hereafter for euer. And his disciples heard *it*.

*Matt. 21. 12. 15 ¶ *And they come to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and beganne to cast out them that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doues,

16 And would not suffer that any man should carie any vessell thorow the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, My house shalbe called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye haue made it a den of theeues.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe Priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when Euen was come, Hee went out of the citie.

*Matt. 21. 19. 20 ¶ *And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried vp from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith vnto him, Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

‖ *Or, haue the faith of God.*

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, ‖Haue faith in God.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Bee thou remoued, and bee thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which hee saith, shall come to passe: he shal haue whatsoeuer he saith.

*Matt. 7. 7. 24 Therfore I say vnto you, *What things soeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye receiue *them*, and ye shall haue *them*.

25 And when ye stand, praying, *forgiue, if ye haue ought against any: that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespasses. *Mat. 6. 14

26 But if you doe not forgiue, neither will your Father which is in heauen, forgiue your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come againe to Hierusalem, *and as he was walking in the Temple, there come to him the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, & the Elders, *Matt. 21. 23.

28 And say vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authority to doe these things?

29 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I will also aske of you one ‖question, and answere me, and I will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things. ‖*Or, thing.*

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? Answere me.

31 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said vnto Iesus, We cannot tell. And Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I doe these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 In a parable of the vineyard let out to vnthankful husbandmen, Christ foretelleth the reprobation of the Iewes, and the calling of the Gentiles: 13 Hee auoideth the snare of the Pharisees and Herodians about paying tribute to Cesar: 18 conuinceth the errour of the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection: 28 resolueth the Scribe who questioned of the first commandement: 35 refuteth the opinion that the Scribes held of Christ: 38 Bidding the people to beware of their ambition, and hypocrisie: 41 and commendeth the poore widow for her two mites, aboue all.

AND *hee began to speake vnto them by parables. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged *a place for* the wine fat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey. *Mat. 21. 33

2 And at the season, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue from the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And againe, hee sent vnto them another seruant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe, he sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Hauing yet therefore one sonne his welbeloued, he sent him also last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But those husbandmen said amongst themselues, This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will giue the vineyard vnto others.

*Psal. 118. 10.

10 *And haue ye not read this Scripture? The stone which the builders reiected, is become the head of the corner:

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is maruellous in our eies.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

*Matth. 22 15.

13 ¶ *And they send vnto him certaine of the Pharises, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we giue, or shall we not giue? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said vnto them, Why tempt yee mee? Bring me a ||penny that I may see it.

|| *Valewing of our money seuen pence halfe penie,* as *Mat.* 18. 28.

16 And they brought it: and he saith vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said vnto him, Cesars.

17 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars: and to God the things that are Gods. And they maruailed at him.

18 ¶ *Then come vnto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying, *Matth. 22. 23.

19 Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If a mans brother die, and leaue his wife behind him, and leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

20 Now there were seuen brethren : and the first tooke a wife, and dying left no seede.

21 And the second tooke her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seuen had her, and left no seede: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seuen had her to wife.

24 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Doe ye not therefore erre, because yee know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage : but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: haue ye not read in the booke of Moses, how in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob?

27 Hee is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing: yee therefore doe greatly erre.

28 ¶ *And one of the Scribes came, and hauing heard them reasoning together, and perceiuing that he had answered them well, asked him which is the first commandement of all. *Matth. 22. 35.

29 And Iesus answered him, The first of al the commandements *is*, Heare, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: This is the first commandement.

31 And the second is like, *namely* this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe: there is none other commandement greater then these.

32 And the Scribe said vnto him, Well master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus saw that he answered discreetly, hee saide vnto him, Thou art not far from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

*Matth. 22. 41.

35 ¶ *And Iesus answered, and said, while hee taught in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe said by the holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, til I make thine enemies thy footstoole.

37 Dauid therefore himselfe calleth him Lord, and whence is hee then his sonne? And the common people heard him gladly.

*Matth. 23. 5.

38 ¶ And he said vnto them in his doctrine, *Beware of the Scribes, which loue to goe in long clothing, and *loue* salutations in the market places,

39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the vppermost roomes at feasts:

*Matth. 23. 14.

40 *Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

*Luke 21. 1.

41 ¶ *And Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, and beheld how the people cast ||money into the treasurie: and many that were rich, cast in much.

|| *A piece of brasse money,* See *Matth.* 10. 9.

42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and she threw in two ||mites, which make a farthing.

|| *It is the seuenth part of one piece of that brasse money.*

43 And he called vnto him his disciples, and saith vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which haue cast into the treasurie.

44 For all they did cast in of their aboundance: but she of her want, did cast in all that she had, *euen* all her liuing.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the Temple: 9 the persecutions for the Gospel: 10 that the Gospel must bee preached to all nations: 14 that great calamities shall happen to the Iewes: 24 and the maner of his comming to Iudgement: 32 The houre whereof, beeing knowen to none, euery man is to watch and pray, that we be not found vnpro-

uided, when he commeth to each one particularly by death.

ANd *as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples saith vnto him, Master, see what maner of stones, and what buildings *are here.* *Matth. 24. 1.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon an other, that shal not be throwen downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Oliues, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him priuately,

4 *Tell vs, when shall these things be? And what shalbe the signe when all these things shalbe fulfilled? *Matth. 24. 3.

5 And Iesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shal come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ:* and shall deceiue many.

7 And when yee shall heare of warres, and rumors of warres, be yee not troubled: For such *things* must needs be, but the end *shall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shalbe earthquakes in diuers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of ||sorrowes.

|| *The word in the originall, importeth, the paines of a woman in trauaile.*

9 ¶ But take heed to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to councels, and in the Synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shalbe brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 *But when they shall lead you, and deliuer you vp, take no thought before hand what ye shall speake, neither doe yee premeditate: but whatsoeuer shall bee giuen you in that houre, that speake yee: for it is not yee that speake, but the holy Ghost. *Matth. 10. 19.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne: and children shall rise vp against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake: but hee that shall endure vnto the ende, the same shall be saued.

14 ¶ *But

*Matt. 24. 15. 14 ¶ *But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth vnderstand) then let them that be in Iudea, flee to the mountaines:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not goe downe into the house, neither enter therin, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe for to take vp his garment.

17 But woe to them that are with child, and to them that giue suck in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight bee not in the winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, vnto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the elects sake whome he hath chosen, he hath shortned the daies.

*Matt. 24. 23. 21 *And then, if any man shall say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or loe, hee is there: beleeue him not.

22 For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shewe signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, euen the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I haue foretold you all things.

*Matt. 24. 29. 24 ¶ *But in those dayes, after that tribulation, the Sunne shalbe darkned, and the Moone shall not giue her light.

25 And the Starres of heauen shall fall, and the powers that *are* in heauen shall be shaken.

26 And then shal they see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with great power and glory.

27 And then shal he send his Angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure winds, from the vttermost part of the earth, to the vttermost part of heauen.

28 Now learne a parable of the fig tree. When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, ye know that summer is neere:

29 So ye in like maner, when ye shal see these things come to passe, knowe that it is nigh, euen at the doores.

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shal passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 *Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. *Mat. 24. 42

34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man taking a farre iourney, who left his house, and gaue authority to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commanded the porter to watch:

35 Watch ye therefore (for ye knowe not when the master of the house commeth, at Euen, or at midnight, or at the cocke crowing, or in the morning.)

36 Lest comming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.

37 And what I say vnto you, I say vnto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 A conspiracie against Christ. 3 Precious ointment is powred on his head by a woman. 10 Iudas selleth his master for money. 12 Christ himselfe foretelleth how he shall be betrayed of one of his disciples: 22 after the Passeouer prepared, & eaten, instituteth his Supper: 26 declareth aforehand the flight of all his disciples, and Peters deniall. 43 Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse. 46 Hee is apprehended in the garden, 53 Falsly accused, and impiously condemned of the Iewes counsell: 65 shamefully abused by them: 66 and thrise denied of Peter.

AFter *two dayes was *the feast of* the Passeouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. *Mat. 26. 2

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an vprore of the people.

3 ¶ *And being in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at meat, there came a woman, hauing an Alabaster boxe of oyntment of ||spikenard very precious, and shee brake the boxe, and powred it on his head. *Mat. 26. 6 || *Or, pure nard: or liquid nard.*

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselues, and said, Why was this waste of the oyntment made?

5 For it might haue bene solde for more then three hundred ||pence, and haue bene giuen to the poore: and they murmured against her. || *See* Matt. 18. 28.

6 And Iesus said, Let her alone, why trouble you her? Shee hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and whensoeuer ye will yee may doe them good: but me ye haue not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, Wheresoeuer this Gospel shalbe preached thorowout the whole world, this also that she hath done, shall be spoken of for a memoriall of her.

*Mat. 26. 14. 10 ¶ *And Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went vnto the chiefe Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to giue him money. And he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

*Mat. 26. 17. || *Or, sacrificed.* 12 ¶ *And the first day of vnleauened bread, when they ||killed the Passeouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe, and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith vnto them, Goe yee into the citie, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoeuer he shall goe in, say yee to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large vpper roome furnished, and prepared: there make ready for vs.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the citie, and found as hee had said vnto them: and they made readie the Passeouer.

17 And in the euening hee commeth with the twelue.

*Mat. 26. 20. 18 *And as they sate, and did eat, Iesus said, Verily I say vnto you, one of you which eateth with me, shall betray mee.

19 And they began to be sorowfull, and to say vnto him, one by one, Is it I? And another *said*, Is it I?

20 And he answered, and saide vnto them, *It is* one of the twelue, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The sonne of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Sonne of man is be-

trayed: Good were it for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

22 ¶ *And as they did eate, Iesus tooke bread, and blessed, and brake *it*, and gaue to them, and said, Take, eate: this is my body. *Mat. 26. 26.

23 And he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks, he gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruit of the Vine, vntill that day that I drinke it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an ‖hymne, they went out into the mount of Oliues. ‖ *Or, psalme*

27 *And Iesus saith vnto them, All ye shall be offended because of mee this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shall be scattered. *Mat. 26. 31.

28 But after that I am risen, I will goe before you into Galilee.

29 *But Peter said vnto him, Although al shalbe offended, yet *wil* not I. *Mat. 26. 33.

30 And Iesus saith vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that this day, euen in this night before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 *And they came to a place which was named Gethsemani, and hee saith to his disciples, Sit yee here, while I shall pray. *Matth. 26. 36.

33 And hee taketh with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heauy,

34 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorowful vnto death: tarie ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a litle, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, father, all things are possible vnto thee, take away this cup from me: Neuerthelesse, not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And hee commeth, and findeth them sleeping, and saith vnto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? Couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest yee enter

into temptation: The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleepe againe, (for their eies were heauie) neither wist they what to answere him.

41 And he commeth the third time, and saith vnto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs goe, Loe, he that betrayeth me, is at hand.

*Mat. 26. 47.

43 ¶ *And immediately, while hee yet spake, commeth Iudas, one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords, and staues, from the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, & the Elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and sayeth, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they layed their hands on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a seruant of the high Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, & said vnto thē, Are ye come out as against a theefe, with swords, & with staues to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the Temple, teaching, and yee tooke me not; but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsooke him, & fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, hauing a linnen cloth cast about his naked body, and the yong men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

*Mat. 26. 57.

53 ¶ *And they led Iesus away to the high Priest, and with him were assembled all the chiefe Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a farre off, euen into the pallace of the high Priest: and he sate with the seruants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

*Mat. 26. 59.

55 *And the chiefe Priests, and all the counsell sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death, & found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certaine, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this Temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesse agree together.

60 And the high Priest stood vp in the mids, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? What is it which these witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Againe, the high Priest asked him, and said vnto him, Art thou the Christ, the sonne of the Blessed?

62 And Iesus said, I am: *and yee shall see the sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in the clouds of heauen.

*Mat. 24. 30.

63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, and saith, What neede we any further witnesses?

64 Yee haue heard the blasphemy: what thinke yee? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some beganne to spit on him, and to couer his face, and to buffet him, and to say vnto him, Prophecie: And the seruants did stricke him with the palmes of their hands.

66 ¶ *And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there commeth one of the maides of the high Priest.

*Mat. 26. 69.

67 And when she saw Peter warning himselfe, she looked vpon him, and said, And thou also wast with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But hee denied, saying, I know not, neither vnderstand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 And a maide saw him againe, and beganne to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it againe. And a little after, they that stood by said againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speach agreeth thereto.

71 But he beganne to curse and to sweare, *saying*, I know not this man of whom yee speake.

72 *And the second time the cocke crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Iesus said vnto him, Before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise. And when he thought thereon, ||he wept.

*Mat. 26. 75.

|| *Or, he wept abundantly, or he began to wept.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

1 Iesus brought bound, and accused before Pilate. 15 Vpon the clamour of the common people, the murderer Barabbas is loosed, and Iesus deliuered vp to be crucified: 17 hee is crowned with thornes, 19 spit on, and mocked: 21 fainteth in bearing his crosse: 27 hangeth betweene two theeues, 29 suffreth the triumphing reproches of the Iewes: 39 but confessed by the Centurion, to bee the Sonne of God: 43 and is honourably buried by Ioseph.

*Matth. 27. 1.

AND *straightway in the morning the chiefe Priests helde a consultation with the Elders and Scribes, and the whole Councell, and bound Iesus, and caried him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And hee answering, said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chiefe Priests accused him of many things: but hee answered nothing.

*Matth. 27. 13.

4 *And Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Iesus yet answered nothing, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 Now at that Feast he released vnto them one prisoner, whomsoeuer they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying alowd, began to desire *him to doe* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 (For hee knew that the chiefe Priests had deliuered him for enuie.)

11 But the chiefe Priests mooued the people, that hee should rather release Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will yee then that I shall do vnto him whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried out againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate saide vnto them,

Why, what euill hath hee done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas vnto them, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his *head*,

18 And beganne to salute him, Haile King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the purple from him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 *And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, comming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to beare his Crosse. *Matth. 27. 32.

22 And they bring him vnto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he receiued it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots vpon them, what euery man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written ouer, *THE KING OF THE IEWES.*

27 And with him they crucifie two theeues, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which sayeth, *And hee was numbred with the transgressours. *Esay 53. 12.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the Crosse.

31 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking, said among themselues with the Scribes, He saued others, himselfe he cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the Crosse, that we

may see and beleeue: And they that were crucified with him, reuiled him.

33 And when the sixth houre was come, there was darkenesse ouer the whole land, vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a loude voice, saying, *Eloi, Eloi, lamasabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

*Mat. 27. 46.

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let alone, let vs see whether Elias will come to take him downe.

37 And Iesus cryed with a loude voice, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the Centurion which stood ouer against him, saw that hee so cryed out, and gaue vp the ghost, hee said, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 There were also women looking on afarre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses, and Salome:

41 Who also when hee was in Galile, *followed him, and ministred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem.

*Luke 8. 3.

42 ¶ *And now when the euen was come, (because it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath)

*Mat. 27. 57.

43 Ioseph of Arimathea, an honourable counseller, which also waited for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and craued the body of Iesus.

44 And Pilate marueiled if he were already dead, and calling vnto him the Centurion, hee asked him whether hee had beene any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioseph.

46 And hee bought fine linnen, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen, and laide him in a sepulchre, which was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and

Mary the mother of Ioses behelde where he was laide.

CHAP. XVI.

1 An Angel declareth the resurrection of Christ to three women. 9 Christ himselfe appeareth to Mary Magdalene: 12 to two going into the countrey: 14 then, to the Apostles, 15 whom he sendeth foorth to preach the Gospel: 19 and ascendeth into heauen.

AND when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames, and Salome, had bought sweete spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 *And very early in the morning, the first day of the week *Luk. 24.
they came vnto the sepulchre, at the rising of the sunne: 1
3 And they said among themselues, Who shall roll vs away ioh. 20. 1.
the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 *And entring into the sepulchre, they sawe a young man *Iohn 20.
sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, 11.
and they were affrighted.

6 And hee sayth vnto them, Be not affrighted; ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, hee is not here: behold the place where they laide him.

7 But goe your way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that hee
goeth before you into Galile, there shall ye see him, *as he *Mat. 26.
said vnto you. 32.

8 And they went out quickely, and fledde from the sepulchre, for they trembled, and were amazed, neither sayd they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when *Iesus* was risen early, the first day of the
weeke, *he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, *out of *Iohn 20.
whom he had cast seuen deuils. 14.
10 And she went and told them that had beene with him, *Luke 8. 2.
as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was aliue, and had beene seene of her, beleeued not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another forme *vnto two *Luke 24.
of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey. 13.

13 And they went and tolde it vnto the residue, neither beleeued they them.

*Luk. 24. 36. iohn 20 19.
|| *Or, together.*

14 ¶ *Afterward he appeared vnto the eleuen, as they sate ||at meat, and vpbraided them with their vnbeliefe, and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them, which had seene him after he was risen.

*Mat. 28. 19.

15 *And he said vnto them, Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospel to euery creature.

*Ioh. 12. 48

16 He that beleeueth and is baptized, shalbe saued, *but he that beleeueth not, shall be damned.

*Act. 16. 18

17 And these signes shal follow them that beleeue, *In my Name shall they

¶ The Gospel according

CHAP. I.

1 The Preface of Luke to his whole Gospel. 5 The conception of Iohn the Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 39 The prophecie of Elizabeth, and of Mary, concerning Christ. 57 The natiuitie & circumcision of Iohn. 67 The prophesie of Zachary both of Christ, 76 and of Iohn.

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hande to set foorth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeued among vs,

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, & ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, hauing had perfect vnderstanding of things from the very first, to write vnto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainetie of those things wherein thou hast bene instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herode the king of Iudea, a certaine Priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the Commandements and ordinances of the Lord, blamelesse.

cast out deuils, *they shall speake with new tongues, *Acts 2. 4.
18 *They shall take vp serpents, and if they drinke any *Act. 28. 5.
deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, *they shall lay hands *Act. 28. 8.
on the sicke, and they shall recouer.
19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken vnto them, he was
receiued vp into heauen, *and sate on the right hand of *Luk. 24. 51.
God.
20 And they went foorth, and preached euery where, the
Lord working with them, *and confirming the worde with *Heb. 2. 4.
signes following. Amen.

to S. Luke.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were now well striken in yeeres.
8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the Priests office before God in the order of his course,
9 According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense when he went into the Temple of the Lord.
10 *And the whole multitude of the people were praying *Exo. 30. 7.
without, at the time of incense. leuit. 16. 17
11 And there appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the Altar of incense.
12 And when Zacharias sawe him, hee was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.
13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.
14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth:
15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shal drinke neither wine, nor strong drinke, and he shall bee filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.
16 *And many of the children of Israel shall hee turne to *Malac. 4. 6
the Lord their God.

17 And hee shall goe before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient ||to the wisedome of the iust, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

|| *Or, by.*

18 And Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife well striken in yeeres.

19 And the Angel answering, said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not able to speake, vntill the day that these things shall bee performed, because thou beleeuest not my words, which shall bee fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and maruelled that hee taried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speake vnto them: and they perceiued that he had seene a vision in the temple: for he beckened vnto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that as soone as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabeth conceiued, and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproch among men.

26 And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgine espoused to a man whose name was Ioseph, of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name was Marie.

28 And the Angel came in vnto her, and said, Haile *thou that art* ||highly fauoured, the Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women.

|| *Or, graciously accepted, or much graced, see verse* 30.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what maner of salutation this should be.

30 And the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Marie, for thou hast found fauour with God.

31 *And behold, thou shalt conceiue

*Esai. 7. 14 mat. 1. 21.

in thy wombe, and bring forth a sonne, and shalt call his name Iesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the sonne of the Highest, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid.

33 *And hee shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome there shall be no end.

*Dan. 7. 14. mich. 4. 7.

34 Then said Marie vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the Angel answered and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the Highest shall ouershadow thee. Therefore also that holy thing which shall bee borne of thee, shall bee called the sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age, and this is the sixt moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God no thing shall be vnpossible.

38 And Marie said, Behold the handmaide of the Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word: and the Angel departed from her.

39 And Marie arose in those dayes, and went into the hill countrey with haste, into a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Marie, the babe leaped in her wombe, and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voyce, and saide, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruite of thy wombe.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to mee?

44 For loe, assoone as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for ioy.

45 And blessed is she ||that beleeued, for there shalbe a performance of those things, which were told her from the Lord.

|| *Or, which beleeued, that there.*

46 And Marie said, My soule doth magnifie the Lord.

47 And my spirit hath reioyced in God my sauiour.

48 For hee hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for behold,

from hencefoorth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to mee great things, and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercy is on them that feare him, from generation to generation.

*Esay 51. 9.
*Psal. 33. 10.

51 *Hee hath shewed strength with his arme, *he hath scattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts.

*1. Sam. 2. 6.

52 *He hath put downe the mighty from their seates, and exalted them of low degree.

*Psal. 34. 10.

53 *Hee hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich hee hath sent emptie away.

*Iere. 31. 3. 20.

54 Hee hath holpen his seruant Israel, *in remembrance of his mercy,

*Psal. 132. 10. gen. 17. 19.

55 *As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for euer.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her owne house.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that shee should be deliuered, and shee brought foorth a sonne.

58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered, and said, Not so, but he shalbe called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, how he would haue him called.

63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn: and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue *loosed*, and hee spake, and praised God.

|| *Or, things.*

65 And feare came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these ||sayings were noised abroad thorowout all the hill countrey of Iudea.

66 And all they that had heard them, layde them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner of childe shal this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed bee the Lord God of Israel, for hee hath visited and redeemed his people,

69 *And hath raised vp an horne of saluation for vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid,

*Psal. 132. 18.

70 *As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which haue bene since the world began:

*Iere. 23 5. and 30. 9.

71 That wee should be saued from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate vs,

72 To performe the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy Couenant,

73 *The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

*Gene. 22. 16.

74 That hee would grant vnto vs, that wee beeing deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, might serue him without feare,

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him, all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt bee called the Prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes,

77 To giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, ||by the remission of their sinnes,

|| *Or, for.*

78 Through the ||tender mercy of our God, whereby the ||day-spring from on high hath visited vs,

|| *Or, bowels of the mercy.*

|| *Or, Sunne-rising, or branch, Zac.* 3. 8. *esay* 11. 1. *malach.* 4. 2. *numb.* 24. 17.

79 To giue light to them that sit in darknes, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts, till the day of his shewing vnto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane Empire: 6 The natiuitie of Christ: 8 one Angel relateth it to the shepherds: 13 many sing praises to God for it. 21 Christ is circumcised. 22 Mary purified: 28 Simeon and Anna prophecie of Christ: 40 who increaseth in wisdome, 46 questioneth in the Temple with the doctours, 51 and is obedient to his parents.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be ||taxed.

|| *Or, inrolled.*

2 (And this taxing was first made whē Cyrenius was gouernor of Syria)

3 And all went to bee taxed, euery one into his owne citie.

4 And Ioseph also wēt vp frō Galilee, out

*Iohn 7. 42. out of the citie of Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the *citie of Dauid, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid,)

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be deliuered.

7 And she brought foorth her first borne sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards abiding in ẏ field, keeping ||watch ouer their flocke by night.

|| *Or, the night watches.*

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the Angel said vnto them, Feare not: For behold, I bring you good tidings of great ioy, which shall be to all people.

11 For vnto you is borne this day, in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe vnto you; yee shall find the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the Angel a multitude of the heauenly hoste praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good wil towards men.

15 And it came to passe, as the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, the shepheards said one to another, Let vs now goe euen vnto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made knowen vnto vs.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Ioseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seene it, they made knowen abroad the saying, which was told them, concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard it, wondered at those things, which were tolde them by the shepheards.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned, glorifying & praising God for all the things that they had heard and seene, as it was told vnto them.

*Gen. 17. 12.

21 *And when eight dayes were ac-

complished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called *Iesus, which was so named of the Angel before he was conceiued in the wombe.

*Mat. 1. 21.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord,

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, *Euery male that openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to the Lord)

*Exod. 13. 2. numb. 18 16.

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to *that which is said in the Law of the Lord, a paire of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons.

*Leuit. 12. 2, 6.

25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was iust and deuout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was reuealed vnto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene the Lords Christ.

27 And hee came by the spirit into the Temple: and when the parents brought in the child Iesus, to doe for him after the custome of the Lawe,

28 Then tooke hee him vp in his armes, and blessed God, and said,

29 Lord now lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation.

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Marie his mother, Behold, this child is set for the *fall and rising againe of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against,

*Esai. 8. 14. rom. 9. 32.

35 (Yea a sword shall pearce thorow thy owne soule also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be reuealed.

36 And there was one Anna a Prophetesse, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had liued with an husband seuen yeeres from her virginitie.

37 And she was a widow of about fourescore and foure yeeres, which de-

parted not from the Temple, but serued *God* with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she comming in that instant, gaue thankes likewise vnto the Lord, and spake of him to al them that looked for redemption in ||Hierusalem.

|| *Or, Israel.*

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Lawe of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit filled with wisedome, and the grace of God was vpon him.

*Deu. 16. 1.

41 Now his parents went to Hierusalem *euery yeere, at the feast of the Passeouer.

42 And when he was twelue yeeres old, they went vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the childe Iesus taried behind in Hierusalem, and Ioseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue bene in the company, went a daies iourney, and they sought him among their kinsefolke and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned backe againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three daies they found him in the Temple, sitting in the midst of the Doctours, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his vnderstanding, and answeres.

48 And when they sawe him, they were amazed: and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? Behold, thy father and I haue sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye sought me? Wist yee not that I must bee about my fathers businesse?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying which he spake vnto them.

51 And he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: But his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

|| *Or, age.*

52 And Iesus increased in wisedom and ||stature, and in fauour with God and man.

CHAP. III.

1 The preaching and baptisme of Iohn: 15 His

testimonie of Christ. 20 Herode imprisoneth Iohn. 21 Christ baptized, receiueth testimony from heauen. 23 The age, and genealogie of Christ, from Ioseph vpwards.

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Gouernour of Iudea, & Herode being Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high Priests, the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias, in the wildernesse.

3 *And he came into all the countrey about Iordane, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remissiõ of sinnes, *Mat. 3. 1.

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the Prophet, saying, *The voyce of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. *Esai. 40. 3

5 Euery valley shall be filled, and euery mountaine and hill shalbe brought low, and the crooked shall bee made straight, and the rough wayes shall be made smooth.

6 And all flesh shal see the saluation of God.

7 Then said hee to the multitude that came forth to bee baptized of him, *O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? *Mat. 3. 7.

8 Bring forth therfore fruits ||worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selues, We haue Abraham to our father: For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham. || *Or, meet for.*

9 And now also the axe is laid vnto the root of the trees: Euery tree therefore which bringeth not foorth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we doe then?

11 He answereth, and saith vnto them, *He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none, and he that hath meat, let him doe likewise. *Iam. 2. 15. 1. ioh. 3. 17.

12 Then came also Publicanes to be baptized, and said vnto him, Master, what shall we doe?

13 And he said vnto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And

|| *Or, put no man in feare.*
|| *Or, allowance.*

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we doe? And he said vnto them, ||Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, & be content with your ||wages.

|| *Or, in suspence.*
|| *Or, reasoned or debated.*

15 And as the people were ||in expectation, and all men ||mused in their hearts of Iohn, whether he were the Christ or not:

*Mat. 3. 11

16 Iohn answered, saying vnto them all, *I indeede baptize you with water, but one mightier then I commeth, the latchet of whose shooes I am not worthy to vnloose, he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

17 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will thorowly purge his floore, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaffe he will burne with fire vnquencheable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he vnto the people.

*Mat. 14. 3.

19 *But Herode the Tetrarch being reprooued by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herode had done,

20 Added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

*Mat. 3. 13.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, *and it came to passe that Iesus also being baptized, and praying, the heauen was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a Doue vpon him, and a voice came from heauen, which said, Thou art my beloued sonne, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirty yeeres of age, being (as was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph, which was *the sonne* of Heli,

24 Which was *the sonne* of Matthat, which was *the sonne* of Leui, which was *the sonne* of Melchi, which was *the sonne* of Ianna, which was *the sonne* of Ioseph,

25 Which was *the sonne* of Matthathias, which was *the sonne* of Amos, which was *the sonne* of Naum, which was *the sonne* of Esli, which was *the sonne* of Nagge,

26 Which was *the sonne* of Maath, which was *the sonne* of Matthathias, which was *the sonne* of Semei, which was *the sonne* of Ioseph, which was *the sonne* of Iuda,

27 Which was *the sonne* of Ioanna, which was *the sonne* of Rhesa, which was *the sonne* of Zorobabel, which was

the sonne of Salathiel, which was *the sonne* of Neri,

28 Which was *the sonne* of Melchi, which was *the sonne* of Addi, which was *the sonne* of Cosam, which was *the sonne* of Elmodam, which was *the sonne* of Er,

29 Which was *the sonne* of Iose, which was *the sonne* of Eliezer, which was *the sonne* of Iorim, which was *the sonne* of Matthat, which was *the sonne* of Leui,

30 Which was *the sonne* of Simeon, which was *the sonne* of Iuda, which was *the sonne* of Ioseph, which was *the sonne* of Ionan, which was *the sonne* of Eliakim,

31 Which was *the sonne* of Melea, which was *the sonne* of Menam, which was *the sonne* of Mattatha, which was *the sonne* of Nathan, which was *the sonne* of Dauid,

32 Which was *the sonne* of Iesse, which was *the sonne* of Obed, which was *the sonne* of Booz, which was *the sonne* of Salmon, which was *the sonne* of Naasson,

33 Which was *the sonne* of Aminadab, which was *the sonne* of Aram, which was *the sonne* of Esrom, which was *the sonne* of Phares, which was *the sonne* of Iuda,

34 Which was *the sonne* of Iacob, which was *the sonne* of Isaac, which was *the sonne* of Abraham, which was *the sonne* of Thara, which was *the sonne* of Nachor,

35 Which was *the sonne* of Saruch, which was *the sonne* of Ragau, which was *the sonne* of Phaleg, which was *the sonne* of Heber, which was *the sonne* of Sala,

36 Which was *the sonne* of Cainan, which was *the sonne* of Arphaxad, which was *the sonne* of Sem, which was *the sonne* of Noe, which was *the sonne* of Lamech,

37 Which was *the sonne* of Mathusala, which was *the sonne* of Enoch, which was *the sonne* of Iared, which was *the sonne* of Maleleel, which was *the sonne* of Cainan,

38 Which was *the sonne* of Enos, which was *the sonne* of Seth, which was *the sonne* of Adam, which was *the sonne* of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The temptation and fasting of Christ: 13 He

ouercommeth the deuill: 14 Beginneth to preach: 16 The people of Nazareth admire his gratious words: 33 he cureth one possessed of a deuill, 38 Peters mother in law, 40 and diuers other sicke persons. 41 The deuils acknowledge Christ, and are reproued for it: 43 he preacheth through the cities.

*Matth. 4. 1.

AND *Iesus being full of the holy Ghost, returned from Iordane, and was led by the spirit into the wildernesse,

2 Being fourtie dayes tempted of the deuil, and in those dayes he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the deuil saide vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, that man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word of God.

5 And the deuil taking him vp into an high mountaine, shewed vnto him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the deuil said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of them; for that is deliuered vnto me, & to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

|| *Or, fall downe before me.*

7 If thou therefore wilt ||worship me, all shalbe thine.

8 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

9 And hee brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence.

10 For it is written, He shall giue his Angels charge ouer thee, to keepe thee.

11 And in their handes they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the deuil had ended all the temptation, hee departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

15 And hee taught in their Syna-

gogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And hee came to *Nazareth, where he had bene brought *Matt. 13.
vp, and as his custome was, he went into the Synagogue on 54.
the Sabbath day, and stood vp for to reade.

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the Booke, he found the place where it was written,

18 *The Spirit of the Lord is vpon mee, because hee hath *Esay 61.
anointed mee, to preach the Gospel to the poore, he hath 1.
sent mee to heale the broken hearted, to preach deliuerance
to the captiues, and recouering of sight to the blinde, to set
at libertie them that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And he closed the booke, and hee gaue it againe to the minister, and sate downe: and the eyes of all them that were in the Synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And hee began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondered at the gracious wordes, which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Iosephs sonne?

23 And hee said vnto them, Yee will surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physition, heale thy selfe: Whatsoeuer wee haue heard done in Capernaum, doe also here in thy countrey.

24 And hee said, Verely I say vnto you, no *Prophet is *Matth.
accepted in his owne countrey. 13. 57.

25 But I tell you of a trueth, *many widowes were in *1. King.
Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heauen was shut vp 17. 9.
three yeres and sixe moneths: when great famine was
throughout all the land:

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue vnto Sarepta *a citie* of Sidon, vnto a woman that was a widow.

27 *And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elizeus *2. King.
the Prophet: and none of them was cleansed, sauing Naaman 5. 14.
the Syrian.

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, & led him
vnto the ||brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that || *Or, edge.*
they might cast him downe headlong.

30 But he passing thorow the mids of them, went his way:

31 And came downe to Capernaum, a citie of Galile, and taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

*Mat. 7. 29.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: *for his worde was with power.

*Mar. 1. 23.

33 ¶ *And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, and cryed out with a loud voice,

|| *Or, away.*

34 Saying, ||Let vs alone, what haue wee to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him. And when the deuill had throwen him in the middes, hee came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselues, saying, What a word is this? for with authoritie and power hee commaundeth the vncleane spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into euery place of the countrey round about.

*Mat. 8. 14.

38 ¶ *And he arose out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, & it left her. And immediatly she arose, & ministred vnto them.

40 ¶ Now when the Sunne was setting, all they that had any sicke with diuers diseases, brought them vnto him: and hee laid his handes on euery one of them, and healed them.

*Mar. 1. 34.

|| *Or, to say that they knew him to be Christ.*

41 *And deuils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Sonne of God. And hee rebuking them, suffered them not ||to speake: for they knewe that hee was Christ.

42 And when it was day, he departed, and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came vnto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 And hee said vnto them, I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And hee preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth the people out of Peters ship. 4 In a miraculous taking of fishes, sheweth how he wil make him and his partners fishers of men: 12 Cleanseth the leper: 16 Prayeth in the wildernesse: 18 Healeth one sicke of the palsie: 27 Calleth Matthew the Publicane: 29 Eateth with sinners, as being the Physician of soules: 34 Foretelleth the fastings and afflictions of the Apostles after his ascension: 36 And likeneth faint hearted and weake disciples, to olde bottels and worne garments.

AND *it came to passe, that as the people preassed vpon him to heare the word of God, hee stood by the lake of Genesareth, Mat. 4. 18.

2 And sawe two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ships, which was Simons, and prayed him, that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto Simon, Lanch out into the deepe, and let downe your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering, said vnto him, Master, wee haue toiled all the night, and haue taken nothing: neuerthelesse at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake:

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them. And they came, & filled both the ships, so that they began to sinke.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and al that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken.

10 And so was also Iames, and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their

ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

*Mat. 8. 2. 12 ¶ *And it came to passe, when he was in a certaine citie, behold a man full of leprosie: who seeing Iesus, fell on his face, & besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I wil: be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And hee charged him to tell no man: but, Goe, and shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy clensing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimonie vnto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himselfe into the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certaine day, as hee was teaching, that there were Pharisees and Doctours of the Law sitting by, which were come out of euery towne of Galilee, and Iudea, and Hierusalem: and the power of the Lord was *present* to heale them.

*Mat. 9. 2. 18 ¶ *And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went vpon the house top, & let him downe through the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Iesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, hee said vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but God alone?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their thoughts, he answering, saide vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Rise vp and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power vpon earth to forgiue sinnes (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie,) I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp that whereon hee lay, and departed to his owne house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with feare, saying, Wee haue seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ *And after these things hee went foorth, and sawe a Publicane, named Leui, sitting at the receit of custome: and hee said vnto him, Follow me. *Mat. 9.9.

28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 And Leui made him a great feast in his owne house: and there was a great company of Publicanes, and of others that sate downe with them.

30 But their Scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why doe ye eate and drinke with Publicanes and sinners?

31 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sicke.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said vnto him, *Why doe the disciples of Iohn fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees: but thine eat and drinke? *Mat. 9.14

34 And he said vnto them, Can yee make the children of the Bride-chamber fast, while the Bridegrome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegrome shall bee taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable vnto them, No man putteth a piece of a newe garment vpon an olde: if otherwise, then both the newe maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the olde.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But newe wine must be put into newe bottles, and both are preserued.

39 No man also hauing drunke olde wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ reproueth the Pharises blindnesse about the obseruation of the Sabbath, by Scripture, reason, and miracle: 13 Chooseth twelue Apostles: 17 Healeth the diseased: 20 Preacheth to his disciples before the people of blessings, and curses: 27 How we must loue our enemies: 46 And ioyne the obedience of good workes, to the hearing of the word: least in the euill day of temptation, we fall like an house built vpon the face of the earth, without any foundation.

*Marke 12 1.

A*Nd it came to passe on the second Sabbath after the first, that he went thorow the corne fields: and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharisees said vnto them, Why doe yee that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 And Iesus answering them, said, Haue yee not read so much as this what Dauid did, when himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eate the Shew bread, and gaue also to them that were with him, which it is not lawful to eate but for the Priests alone?

5 And he said vnto them, That the sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

*Mat. 12. 9.

6 *And it came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath day: that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise vp, and stand foorth in the mids. And he arose, and stood foorth.

9 Then said Iesus vnto them, I will aske you one thing, Is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about vpon them all, he said vnto the man, Stretch foorth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with mad-

nesse, and communed one with another what they might doe to Iesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that hee went out into a mountaine to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day, he called vnto him his disciples: *and of them he chose twelue; whom also hee named Apostles: *Mat. 10. 1

14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother: Iames and Iohn, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon, called Zelotes,

16 And Iudas **the brother* of Iames, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour. * Iude. 1.

17 ¶ And hee came downe with them, and stood in the plaine, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people, out of all Iudea and Hierusalem, and from the Sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases,

18 And they that were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And hee lifted vp his eyes on his disciples, and said, *Blessed be yee poore: for yours is the kingdome of God. *Mat. 5. 3.

21 Blessed are yee that hunger now: for yee shall be filled. Blessed are yee that weepe now, for yee shall laugh.

22 Blessed are yee when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shal reproach you, and cast out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioice yee in that day, and leape for ioy: for behold, your reward is great in heauen for in the like maner did their fathers vnto the Prophets.

24 *But woe vnto you that are rich: for yee haue receiued your consolation. *Amos. 6. 1

25 *Woe vnto you that are full: for yee shall hunger. Woe vnto you that laugh now: for yee shall mourne and weepe. *Esai. 65. 13.

26 Woe vnto you when all men shall speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false Prophets.

27 ¶ *But

*Matth. 5. 44.

27 ¶ *But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies, doe good to them which hate you,

28 Blesse them that curse you, & pray for them which despitefully vse you.

*Matth. 5. 39. *1. Cor. 6. 7.

29 *And vnto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer also the other: *and him that taketh away thy cloake, forbid not to take thy coat also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

*Matth. 7. 12. tob. 4. 16.

31 *And as yee would that men should doe to you, doe yee also to them likewise.

*Matth. 5. 46.

32 *For if yee loue them which loue you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also loue those that loue them.

33 And if ye doe good to them which doe good to you, What thanke haue ye? for sinners also doe euen the same.

*Matth. 5. 42.

34 *And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receiue, What thanke haue ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receiue as much againe.

35 But loue yee your enemies, and doe good, and lend, hoping for nothing againe: and your reward shall bee great, and ye shalbe the children of the Highest: for hee is kinde vnto the vnthankfull, and to the euill.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.

*Matt. 7. 1.

37 *Iudge not, and ye shall not bee iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shall be forgiuen.

38 Giue, and it shall bee giuen vnto you, good measure, preassed downe, and shaken together, and running ouer, shall men giue into your bosome: for with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall bee measured to you againe.

*Matth. 15. 14.

39 And hee spake a parable vnto them, *Can the blinde leade the blinde? Shall they not both fall into the ditch?

*Matth. 10. 24.

||*Or, shalbe perfected as his master.*

40 *The disciple is not aboue his master: but euery one ||that is perfect shalbe as his master.

*Matth. 7. 3.

41 *And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let mee pull out the mote that is in thine eye: when thou thy selfe beholdest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pul out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 *For a good tree bringeth not foorth corrupt fruit: neither doeth a corrupt tree bring foorth good fruit. *Matth. 7. 16.

44 For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruit: for of thornes men doe not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is good: and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is euill: For of the abundance of the heart, his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ *And why call ye mee Lord, Lord, and doe not the things which I say? *Matth. 7. 21.

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and layd the foundation on a rocke. And when the flood arose, the streame beat vehemently vpon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house vpon the earth: against which the streame did beate vehemently, and immediatly it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ findeth a greater faith in the Centurion a Gentile, then in any of the Iewes: 10 Healeth his seruant being absent: 11 Raiseth from death the widowes sonne at Naim: 19 Answereth Iohns messengers with the declaration of his miracles: 24 Testifieth to the people what opinion hee held of Iohn: 30 Inueigheth against the Iewes, who with neither the maners of Iohn, nor of Iesus could be wonne: 36 and sheweth by occasion of Marie Magdalene, how he is a friend to sinners, not to maintaine them in sinnes, but to forgiue them their sinnes, vpon their faith and repentance.

NOw when hee had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, *hee entred into Capernaum. *Matth. 8. 5.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruant, who was deare vnto him, was sicke and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he would come and heale his seruant.

4 And when they came to Iesus, they besought him instantly, saying, that hee was worthy for whome hee should doe this.

5 For he loueth our nation, and hee hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them. And when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say in a worde, and my seruant shall bee healed.

8 For I also am a man set vnder authoritie, hauing vnder mee souldiers: and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and hee commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, hee marueiled at him, and turned him about, and saide vnto the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the seruant whole that had bene sicke.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Naim: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man caried out, the onely sonne of his mother, and shee was a widow: and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and saide vnto her, Weepe not.

|| *Or, coffin.*

14 And hee came and touched the ||beere (and they that bare him, stood still.) And he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake: and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on all, and they glorified God, saying, that a great Prophet is risen vp among vs, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 *And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things. *Mat. 11. 2.

19 ¶ And Iohn calling vnto him two of his disciples, sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or looke we for another?

20 When the men were come vnto him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou hee that should come, or looke we for another?

21 And in that same houre hee cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many that were blind, he gaue sight.

22 Then Iesus answering, said vnto them, Go your way, and tell Iohn what things ye haue seene and heard, how that the blind see, the lame walke, the lepers are clensed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, to the poore the Gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoeuer shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, hee beganne to speake vnto yͤ people concerning Iohn: What went ye out into the wildernesse for to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and liue delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you, and much more then a Prophet.

27 This is he of whome it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, among those that are borne of women, there is not a greater Prophet then Iohn the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the Publicanes, iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharisees and Lawyers ||reiected the counsell of God ||against themselues, being not baptized of him. || *Or, frustrated.* || *Or, within themselues.*

31 ¶ And the Lord said, *Whereun- *Mat. 11. 16

to then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like vnto children sitting in the market place, & calling one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: wee haue mourned to you, and yee haue not wept.

33 For Iohn the Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a deuill.

34 The sonne of man is come, eating, and drinking, and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisedome is iustified of all her children.

*Mar. 14. 3

36 ¶ *And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sate downe to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie which was a sinner, when shee knew that Iesus sate at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an Alabaster boxe of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behind him, weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the haires of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himselfe, saying, This man, if he were a Prophet, would haue knowen who, and what maner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine creditour, which had two debtors: the one ought fiue hundred ||pence, and the other fiftie.

|| *See Mat.* 18. 28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgaue them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, and saide, I suppose, that hee to whome he forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast rightly iudged.

44 And hee turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gauest me no water for my feete: but shee hath washed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oile thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with oyntment.

47 Wherefore, I say vnto thee, her sinnes, which are many, are forgiuen, for she loued much: but to whom litle is forgiuen, the same loueth litle.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen.

49 And they that sate at meat with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that forgiueth sinnes also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee, goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

3 Women minister vnto Christ of their substance 4 Christ after he had preached from place to place, attended with his Apostles, propoundeth the parable of the sower, 16 and of the candle: 21 declareth who are his mother, and brethren: 22 rebuketh the winds: 26 casteth the Legion of deuils out of the man, into the heard of swine: 37 is reiected of the Gadarenes: 43 healeth the woman of her bloodie issue, 49 and raiseth frō death Iairus daughter

AND it came to passe afterward, $\overset{t}{y}$ he went throughout euery citie and village preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdome of God: and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women which had bene healed of euill spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene *out of whom went seuen deuils, *Mar. 16. 9.

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 ¶ *And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of euery citie, he spake by a parable: *Mat. 13. 2.

5 A Sower went out to sowe his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden downe, and the foules of the aire deuoured it.

6 And some fell vpon a rocke, and assoone as it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground,

and sprang vp, and bare fruite an hundred fold. And when hee saide these things, he cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know the mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in parables, that seeing, they might not see, and hearing, they might not vnderstand.

*Mat. 13. 18.

11 *Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare: then commeth the deuil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

13 They on the rocke, are they which when they heare, receiue the word with ioy; and these haue no roote, which for a while beleeue, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they, which when they haue heard, goe forth, and are choked with cares and riches, and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruite to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart hauing heard the word, keepe it, and bring foorth fruite with patience.

*Mat. 5. 15.

16 ¶ *No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it with a vessell, or putteth it vnder a bed: but setteth it on a candlesticke, that they which enter in, may see the light.

*Mat. 10. 26.

17 *For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be knowen, and come abroad.

*Mat. 13. 12.

|| *Or, thinketh that he hath.*

18 Take heede therefore how yee heare: *for whosoeuer hath, to him shall bee giuen; and whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken, euen that which he ||seemeth to haue.

*Mat. 12. 46.

19 ¶ *Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the prease.

20 And it was told him *by certaine* which saide, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And hee answered and said vnto them, My mother and my brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it.

*Mat. 8. 23.

22 ¶ *Now it came to passe on a

certaine day, that he went into a ship, with his disciples: and hee said vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake, and they lanched foorth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleepe, and there came downe a storme of wind on the lake, and they were filled *with water*, and were in ieopardie.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he rose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calme.

25 And he saide vnto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraide wondred, saying one to another, What maner of man is this? For he commandeth euen the winds and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ *And they arriued at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galilee. *Mat. 8. 28.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the citie a certaine man which had deuils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house, but in the tombes.

28 When he saw Iesus, he cried out, and fell downe before him, and with a loud voyce said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus, thou sonne of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the vncleane spirit to come out of the man: For oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chaines, and in fetters: and he brake the bands, and was driuen of the deuil into the wildernesse.)

30 And Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountaine: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them: and he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently downe a steepe place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went,

and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what meanes he that was possessed of the deuils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them, for they were taken with great feare: and he went vp into the ship, and returned back againe.

38 Now the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne to thine owne house, and shew how great things God hath done vnto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole citie how great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Iesus was returned, the people gladly receiued him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ *And behold, there came a man named Iairus, and hee was a ruler of the Synagogue, and hee fell downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that hee would come into his house:

*Matth. 9. 18.

42 For hee had one onely daughter about twelue yeeres of age, and she lay a dying. (But as hee went the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman hauing an issue of blood twelue yeres, which had spent all her liuing vpon Phisitions, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Iesus saide, Who touched mee? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and preasse thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Iesus saide, Some body hath touched mee: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, shee came trembling, and falling downe before him, shee declared vnto him before all the people, for

what cause shee had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly.

48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace.)

49 ¶ While hee yet spake, there commeth one from the ruler of the Synagogues *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not, beleeue onely, and she shalbe made whole.

51 And when hee came into the house, hee suffered no man to goe in, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and the mother of the mayden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weepe not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

54 And hee put them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and called, saying, Mayd, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and shee arose straightway: and hee commanded to giue her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but hee charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth his Apostles to worke miracles, and to preach. 7 Herod desired to see Christ. Christ feedeth fiue thousand: 38 inquireth what opinion the world had of him: foretelleth his passion: 23 proposeth to all, the paterne of his patience. 28 The transfiguration. 37 Hee healeth the lunaticke: 43 Againe forewarneth his disciples of his Passion: 46 commendeth humilitie: 51 biddeth them to shew mildnesse towards all, without desire of reuenge. 57 Diuers would follow him, but vpon conditions.

THen *he called his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authority ouer all deuils, and to cure diseases.

*Matth. 10. 1.

2 And hee sent them to preach the Kingdome of God, and to heale the sicke.

3 And he said vnto them, Take nothing for your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither haue two coates apeece.

4 And whatsoeuer house yee enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoeuer will not receiue you, when ye goe out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feete, for a testimonie against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the townes, preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

*Mat. 14. 1.

7 ¶ *Now Herode the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and hee was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen from the dead:

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe.

9 And Herode said, Iohn haue I beheaded: but who is this of whom I heare such things? And hee desired to see him.

*Mat. 14. 13.

10 ¶ And the Apostles when they were returned, tolde him all that they had done. *And hee tooke them, and went aside priuately into a desert place, belonging to the citie called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him, and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

*Mat. 14. 15.

12 *And when the day beganne to weare away, then came the twelue, and said vnto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the townes and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said vnto them, Giue yee them to eate. And they said, Wee haue no more but fiue loaues and two fishes, except we should goe and buy meate for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit downe by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit downe.

16 Then he tooke the fiue loaues and the two fishes, and looking vp to heauen, hee blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eate, and were all filled. And there was taken vp of fragments that remained to them, twelue baskets.

18 ¶ *And it came to passe, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? *Mat. 16. 13.

19 They answering, said, Iohn the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old Prophets is risen againe.

20 He said vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing,

22 Saying, *The Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders, and chiefe Priests, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised the third day. *Mat. 17. 22.

23 ¶ *And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse daily, and follow me. *Mat. 10. 38.

24 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.

25 *For what is a man aduantaged, if hee gaine the whole world, and lose himselfe, or be cast away? *Mat. 16. 26. marke 8. 36.

26 *For whosoeuer shall bee ashamed of me, and of my wordes, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his owne glory, and in his Fathers, and of the holy Angels. *Matt. 10. 33.

27 *But I tell you of a trueth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdome of God. *Matt. 16. 28.

28 ¶ *And it came to passe, about an eight dayes after these ||sayings, hee tooke Peter, and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray: *Mat. 17. 1. || *Or, things.*

29 And as hee prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias,

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here, and let vs make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and ouershadowed them, & they feared, as they entred into the cloude.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Son, heare him.

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone, and they kept it close, & told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

*Mat. 17. 14 37 ¶ *And it came to passe, that on the next day, when they were come downe from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the companie cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee looke vpon my sonne, for he is mine onely child.

39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and hee suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him that he fometh againe, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Iesus answering, said, O faithlesse, and peruerse generation, how long shal I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And as he was yet a comming, the deuill threw him downe, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the child, and deliuered him againe to his father.

43 ¶ And they were al amazed at the mightie power of God: But while they wondred euery one at all things which Iesus did, he said vnto his disciples,

*Matth. 17 22. 44 *Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares: for the Sonne of man shall bee deliuered into the handes of men.

45 But they vnderstood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceiued it not: and they feared to aske him of that saying.

*Mat. 18. 1 mark. 9. 34. 46 ¶ *Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 And Iesus perceiuing ỹ thought of their heart, tooke a child, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer shall receiue this child in my Name, re-

ceiueth me: and whosoeuer shal receiue me, receiueth him that sent me: For hee that is least among you all, the same shalbe great.

49 ¶ *And Iohn answered, and said, Master, we saw one *Mar. 9.
casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because 38
he followeth not with vs.

50 And Iesus said vnto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against vs, is for vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should bee receiued vp, he stedfastly set his face to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receiue him, because his face was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn sawe this, they
said, Lord, wilt thou that wee command fire to come downe
from heauen, and consume them, euen as *Elias did? *2. Kings

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know 1. 10.
not what maner spirit ye are of.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ *And it came to passe that as they went in the way, *Mat. 8.
a certaine man said vnto him, Lord, I wil follow thee 19.
whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, Foxes haue holes, and birds of the aire haue nests, but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 *And he said vnto another, Follow me: But he said, *Mat. 8.
Lord, suffer mee first to goe and bury my father. 21

60 Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdome of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first goe bid them farewel, which are at home at my house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man hauing put his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fit for the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ sendeth out at once, seuenty disciples to worke miracles, and to preach: 17

Admonisheth them to be humble, and wherin to reioyce: 21 Thanketh his father for his grace: 23 Magnifieth the happy estate of his Church: 25 Teacheth the Lawyer, how to attaine eternall life, and to take euery one for his neighbour, that needeth his mercy: 41 Reprehendeth Martha, and commendeth Mary her sister.

*Mat. 10. 1. AFter *these things, the Lord appointed other seuenty also, and sent them two and two before his face, into euery citie and place, whither hee himselfe would come.

*Mat. 9. 37. 2 Therefore said hee vnto them, *The haruest truly is great, but the labourers are few; pray ye therefore the Lord of the haruest, that he would send foorth labourers into his haruest.

*Mat. 10. 16. 3 Go your wayes: *Behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolues.

4 Cary neither purse nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

*Mat. 10. 11. 5 *And into whatsoeuer house yee enter, first say, Peace bee to this house.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon it: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in the same house remaine, eating and drinking such things as they giue: For the labourer is worthy of his hire. Goe not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoeuer citie yee enter, and they receiue you, eate such things as are set before you:

9 And heale the sicke that are therein, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer citie yee enter, and they receiue you not, goe your waies out into the streetes of the same, and say,

11 Euen the very dust of your citie which cleaueth on vs, we doe wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be yee sure of this, that the kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

12 But I say vnto you, That it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodome, then for that citie.

*Mat. 11. 21. 13 *Woe vnto thee Chorazin, wo vnto thee Bethsaida: For if the mighty workes had beene done in Tyre and Sidon, which haue beene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the iudgment, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

16 *Hee that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

*Mat. 10. 40.

17 ¶ And the seuenty returned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subiect vnto vs through thy name.

18 And he said vnto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie: and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subiect vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ In that houre Iesus reioyced in spirit, and said, I thanke thee, O father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes: euen so father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 ||All things are deliuered to me of my father: and no man knoweth who the sonne is, but the father: and who the father is, but the sonne, and he to whom the sonne will reueale him.

|| *Many ancient copies adde these words, And turning to his Disciples he said.*

23 ¶ And he turned him vnto his disciples, and said priuately, *Blessed are the eyes which see the things that yee see.

*Mat. 13. 16.

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets, and kings haue desired to see those things which yee see, and haue not seene them: & to heare those things which yee heare, and haue not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him, saying, *Master, what shall I doe to inherite eternall life? He said vnto him,

*Mat. 22. 35.

26 What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde, and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 And he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answering, said, A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, and fel among theeues, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 And by chaunce there came downe a certaine Priest that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Leuite, when hee was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certaine Samaritane as he iourneyed, came where he was; and when hee saw him, hee had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, powring in oile and wine, and set him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and tooke care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, hee tooke out two ||pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and saide vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe I will repay thee.

|| *See Matt.* 20. 2.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto himt hat fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certaine village: and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And shee had a sister called Mary, which also sate at Iesus feet, and heard his word:

40 But Martha was cumbred about much seruing, and came to him, and said, Lord, doest thou not care that my sister hath left mee to serue alone? Bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needefull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not bee taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly: 11 assuring that God so will giue vs good things. 14 He casting out a dumbe deuil, rebuketh the blasphemous Pharisees: 28 and sheweth who are blessed: 29 preacheth to the people, 37 and reprehendeth the outward shew of holinesse in the Pharisees, Scribes and Lawyers.

ANd it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when hee ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

2 And hee said vnto them, When ye pray, say, *Our Father which art in heauen, Halowed be thy Name, Thy kingdome come, Thy will be done as in heauen, so in earth. *Matth. 6. 9.

3 Giue vs ||day by day our dayly bread. || *Or, for the day.*

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for we also forgiue euery one that is indebted to vs. And lead vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill.

5 And he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall goe vnto him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues.

6 For a friend of mine ||in his iourney is come to me, and I haue nothing to set before him, || *Or, out of his way.*

7 And he from within shal answere and say, Trouble mee not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue thee.

8 I say vnto you, Though he will not rise, and giue him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, hee will rise and giue him as many as he needeth.

9 *And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shal find: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you. *Matth. 7. 7.

10 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.

11 *If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will hee giue him a stone? Or if he aske a fish, will he for a fish giue him a serpent? *Matth. 7. 9.

12 Or if he shall aske an egge, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your children: how much more shall your heauenly

Father giue the holy Spirit to them that aske him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a deuil, and it was dumbe. And it came to passe, when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake: and the people wondred.

*Mat. 9. 34. and 12. 24.

15 But some of them said, *Hee casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils.

16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heauen.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said vnto them, Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and a house *diuided* against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdom stand? Because yee say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your sonnes cast them out? therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out deuils, no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger then he shal come vpon him, and ouercome him, hee taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

*Mat. 12. 43.

24 *When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and finding none, he sayth, I will returne vnto my house whence I came out.

25 And when hee commeth, hee findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe as hee spake these things, a certaine woman of the company lift vp her voice, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the pappes which thou hast sucked.

28 But hee said, Yea, rather blessed are they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

*Matt. 12. 38.

29 ¶ *And when the people were gathered thicke together, hee began to

say, This is an euill generation, they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen it, but the signe of Ionas the Prophet:

30 For as Ionas was a signe vnto the Nineuites, so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with the men of this generation, & condemne them: for shee came from the vtmost parts of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Solomon: and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineue shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

33 *No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither vnder a ||bushell, but on a candlesticke, that they which come in may see the light.

*Mat. 5. 15.
||*See Matt.* 5. 15.

34 *The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is euill, thy body also is full of darkenesse.

*Mat. 6. 22.

35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darknesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, hauing no part darke, the whole shalbe full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doeth giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe to meate.

38 And when the Pharise saw it, he marueiled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 *And the Lord said vnto him, Now doe ye Pharises make cleane the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of rauening and wickednesse.

*Mat. 23. 25.

40 Yee fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of such things ||as you haue: and behold, all things are cleane vnto you.

||*Or, as you are able.*

42 But woe vnto you Pharises: for ye tythe Mint and Rue, and all maner of herbes, and passe ouer iudgement, and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

43 *Woe

*Mat. 23. 6. 43 *Woe vnto you Pharisees: for ye loue the vppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walk ouer them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest vs also.

*Mat. 23. 4 46 *And he said, Woe vnto you also ye lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

*Matth. 23. 29. 47 *Woe vnto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truely ye beare witnesse that ye allowe the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and yee build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisedome of God, I wil send them Prophets and Apostles, and *some* of them they shal slay and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation,

*Gen. 4. 8. 51 *From the blood of Abel vnto the blood of Zacharias, which perished betweene the Altar and the Temple: Verely I say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation.

*Matth. 23 13. 52 *Woe vnto you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that were entring in, ye ||hindred.

|| *Or, forbade*

53 And as he said these things vnto them, the Scribes and the Pharisees began to vrge *him* vehemently, and to prouoke him to speake of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Christ preacheth to his disciples to auoid hypocrisie, and fearefulnesse in publishing his doctrine: 13 Warneth the people to beware of couetousnes, by the parable of the rich man who set vp greater barnes. 22 We must not be ouer carefull of earthly things, 31 but seeke the kingdome of God, 33 giue almes, 36 bee ready at a knocke to open to our Lord whensoeuer he commeth. 41 Christs ministers are to see to their charge, 49 and looke for persecution. 54 The people must take this time

of grace, 58 because it is a fearefull thing to die without reconciliation.

IN *the meane time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one vpon another, he began to say vnto his disciples first of all, Beware yee of the leauen of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

*Mat. 16. 6.

2 *For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuealed, neither hid, that shall not be knowen.

*Matth. 10. 26.

3 Therefore, whatsoeuer yee haue spoken in darkenesse, shall bee heard in the light: and that which yee haue spoken in the eare, in closets, shal be proclaimed vpon the house tops.

4 *And I say vnto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, haue no more that they can doe.

*Matth. 10 28.

5 But I will forewarne you whom you shall feare: Feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say vnto you, Feare him.

6 Are not fiue sparrowes solde for two ||farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

|| *See Matt.* 10. 29.

7 But euen the very haires of your head are all numbred: Feare not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrowes.

8 *Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me before men, him shall the Sonne of man also confesse before the Angels of God.

*Matth. 10 32. 2. tim. 2. 12.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shalbe denied before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but vnto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiuen.

11 *And when they bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto Magistrates, & powers, take yee no thought how or what thing ye shall answere, or what ye shall say:

*Matth. 10. 19.

12 For the holy Ghost shal teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company saide vnto him, Master, speake to my brother, that he diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made mee a iudge, or a diuider ouer you?

15 And he said vnto them, Take heed

and beware of couetousnes: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought foorth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no roome where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods layd vp for many yeeres, take thine ease, eate, drinke, and be merry.

20 But God said vnto him, Thou foole, this night †thy soule shal be required of thee: then whose shal those things be which thou hast prouided?

† *Gre. doe they require thy soule.*

21 So is he that laieth vp treasure for himselfe, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he said vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, *Take no thought for your life what yee shall eate, neither for the body what yee shall put on.

*Mat. 6. 25.

23 The life is more then meate, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the rauens, for they neither sow nor reape, which neither haue storehouse nor barne, and God feedeth them: How much more are yee better then the foules?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubite?

26 If yee then bee not able to doe that thing which is least, why take yee thought for the rest?

27 Consider the Lillies how they growe, they toile not; they spinne not: and yet I say vnto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the ouen: how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith?

29 And seeke not yee what yee shall eate, or what ye shall drinke, ‖neither be ye of doubtfull minde.

‖ *Or, liue not in carefull suspence.*

30 For all these things doe the nations of the world seeke after: and your father knoweth that yee haue neede of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seeke yee the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

32 Feare not, litle flocke, for it is your fathers good pleasure to giue you the kingdome.

33 Sell that yee haue, and giue almes: *prouide your selues bagges which waxe not old, a treasure in the heauens that faileth not, where no theefe approcheth, neither moth corrupteth. *Mat. 6. 20.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 *Let your loines be girded about, and your lights burning, *1. Pet. 1. 13.

36 And ye your selues like vnto men that waite for their Lord, when he will returne from the wedding, that when he commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom the Lord when he commeth, shall find watching: Verily, I say vnto you, That he shall girde himselfe, and make them to sit downe to meate, and will come foorth and serue them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those seruants.

39 *And this know, that if the good man of the house had knowen what houre the theefe would come, he would haue watched, and not haue suffred his house to be broken thorow. *Mat. 24. 43.

40 Be yee therefore ready also: for the sonne of man commeth at an houre when yee thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said vnto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them their portion of meate in due season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when he commeth, shall find so doing.

44 Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that hee will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But and if that seruant say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming; and shall beginne to beat the men seruants, and maidens, and to eate and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The Lord of that seruant will

come in a day when hee looketh not for him, and at an houre when hee is not ware, and will ||cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

|| *Or, cut him off.*

47 And that seruant which knew his Lords will, and prepared not *himselfe*, neither did according to his will, shalbe beaten with many stripes.

48 But hee that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall bee beaten with few stripes. For vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shal bee much required: and to whom men haue committed much, of him they will aske the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I haue a baptisme to be baptized with, and how am I ||straitned till it be accomplished?

|| *Or, pained.*

51 *Suppose yee that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, Nay, but rather diuision.

*Matt. 10. 34.

52 For from henceforth there shalbe fiue in one house diuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall bee diuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in lawe against her daughter in lawe, and the daughter in law against her mother in lawe.

54 ¶ And he said also to the people, *When ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway yee say, There commeth a showre, and so it is.

*Matt. 16. 2.

55 And when ye see the Southwind blow, ye say, There will be heat, and it commeth to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it that yee doe not discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why euen of your selues iudge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ *When thou goest with thine aduersary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, giue diligence that thou mayest be deliuered from him, lest hee hale thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

*Matth. 5. 25.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payd the very last ||mite.

|| *See Mar. 12. 42.*

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance vpon the punishment of the Galileans, and others. 6 The fruitlesse figge tree may not stand. 11 Hee healeth the crooked woman: 18 sheweth the powerfull working of the word in the hearts of his chosen, by the parable of the graine of mustard seed, and of leuen: 24 exhorteth to enter in at the straite gate, 31 and reproueth Herode, and Hierusalem.

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners aboue all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteene, vpon whom the towre in Siloe fell, and slew them, thinke ye that they were ||sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Hierusalem? || *Or, debters.*

5 I tell you, Nay; but except yee repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ Hee spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figtree planted in his Vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said hee vnto the dresser of his Vineyard, Beholde, these three yeeres I come seeking fruit on this figtree, and finde none: cut it downe, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere also, till I shall digge about it, and doung it:

9 And if it beare fruit, *Well:* and if not, then after that, thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And he was teaching in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath.

11 ¶ And beholde, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eighteene yeeres, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift vp her selfe.

12 And when Iesus saw her, he called her to him, and said vnto her, Woman, thou art loosed frō thy infirmitie.

13 And hee layd his handes on her, and immediatly she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath

day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doeth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, loe these eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when hee had said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: & all the people reioyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

*Mat. 13. 31.

18 ¶ *Then said he, Vnto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seed, which a man tooke, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the foules of the aire lodged in the branches of it.

20 And againe hee said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

||*See Mat.* 13. 33.

21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke and hidde in three ||measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

*Mat. 9. 35.

22 *And he went thorow the cities and villages, teaching and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, are there few that be saued? And he said vnto them,

*Mat. 7. 13.

24 ¶ *Striue to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the master of the house is risen vp, & hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, & to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, and he shal answere, & say vnto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, Wee haue eaten and drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

*Mat. 7. 23.

27 *But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when yee shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and you *your selues* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the East, and from the West, and from the

North, and from the South, and shall sit downe in the kingdome of God.

30 *And behold, there are last, which shall be first; and there are first, which shall be last. *Mat. 19. 30.

31 ¶ The same day there came certaine of the Pharises, saying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart hence; for Herode will kill thee.

32 And he said vnto them, Go ye and tell that Foxe, behold, I cast out deuils, and I doe cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Neuerthelesse, I must walke to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet perish out of Hierusalem.

34 *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee; how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as a henne doeth gather her brood vnder her wings, & ye would not? *Mat. 23. 37.

35 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate. And verely I say vnto you, ye shall not see me, vntill the time come when yee shall say, Blessed is hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Christ healeth the dropsie on the Sabbath: 7 teacheth humilitie: 12 to feast the poore: 15 Vnder the parable of the great supper, sheweth how worldly minded men, who contemne the word of God, shalbe shut out of heauen. 25 Those who wil be his disciples, to beare their crosse must make their accounts aforehand, lest with shame they reuolt from him afterward, 34 and become altogether vnprofitable, like salt that hath lost his sauour.

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharises to eat bread on ẙ Sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 And Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And he tooke him, and healed him, & let him go,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall haue an asse or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

7 ¶ And he put foorth a parable to

H those

those which were bidden, when he marked howe they chose out the chiefe roumes, saying vnto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not downe in the highest roume: lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him,

9 And hee that bade thee and him, come, and say to thee, Giue this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest roume.

*Prou. 25. 5 10 *But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roume, that when he that bade thee commeth, hee may say vnto thee, Friend, goe vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at meate with thee.

*Mat. 23. 12. 11 *For whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shalbe abased: and hee that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.

12 ¶ Then said hee also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsemen, nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee.

*Tob. 4. 7. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call *the poore, the maimed, the lame, the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meate with him, heard these things, he said vnto him, *Blessed is hee that shall eate bread in the kingdom of God. *Reu. 19. 9.

*Mat. 22. 2. 16 *Then said hee vnto him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his seruant at supper time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a piece of ground, and I must needs goe and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goe to prooue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue maried a wife: and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, sayde to his seruant, Goe out quickely into the streetes and lanes of the city, and bring

in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roume.

23 And the Lord said vnto the seruant, Goe out into the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and hee turned, and said vnto them,

26 *If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea and his owne life also, hee cannot be my disciple. *Matth. 10. 37.

27 And whosoeuer doeth not beare his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a towre, sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after hee hath laide the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man beganne to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not downe first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, hee sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 ¶ *Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? *Mat. 5. 13.

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill: but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheep: 8 Of the piece of siluer: 11 Of the prodigall sonne.

THen drew neere vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, for to heare him.

2 And the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying,

murmured, saying, This man receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And he spake this parable vnto them, saying,

*Matth. 18 12.

4 *What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he loose one of them, doth not leaue the ninety and nine in the wildernesse, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he find it?

5 And when he hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders, reioycing.

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends, and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me, for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in heauen ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer ninety and nine iust persons, which need no repentance.

|| *Drachma heere translated a piece of siluer, is the eight part of an ounce, which commeth to seuen pence halfepenie, and is equall to the Romane penie, Mat.* 18. 28

8 ¶ Either what woman hauing ten ||pieces of siluer, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seeke diligently till shee find it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Reioyce with me, for I haue found yͤ piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And hee said, A certaine man had two sonnes:

12 And the yonger of them said to his father, Father, giue me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he diuided vnto them his liuing.

13 And not many dayes after, the yonger sonne gathered al together, and tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there wasted his substance with riotous liuing.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he beganne to be in want.

15 And he went and ioyned himselfe to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes that the swine did eate: & no man gaue vnto him.

17 And when he came to himselfe, he said, How many hired seruants of my fathers haue bread inough and to spare, and I perish with hunger?

18 I will arise and goe to my father, and will say vnto him, Father, I

haue sinned against heauen and before thee.

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired seruants.

20 And he arose and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ranne, and fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 But the father saide to his seruants, Bring foorth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shooes on his feete.

23 And bring hither the fatted calfe, and kill it, and let vs eate and be merrie.

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue againe; hee was lost, & is found. And they began to be merie.

25 Now his elder sonne was in the field, and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musicke & dauncing,

26 And he called one of the seruants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29 And he answering said to his father, Loe, these many yeeres doe I serue thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest mee a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But as soone as this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy liuing with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calfe.

31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue is thine.

32 It was meete that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the vniust steward. 14 Christ reprooueth the hypocrisie of the couetous Pharisees. 19 The rich glutton, and Lazarus the begger.

And hee said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man which had a Steward, and the same was accused vnto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And hee called him, and said vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an accompt of thy stewardship: for thou mayest bee no longer Steward.

3 Then the Steward said within himselfe, What shall I doe, for my lord taketh away from mee the Stewardship? I cannot digge, to begge I am ashamed.

4 I am resolued what to doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 So hee called euery one of his lords detters vnto him, and said vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my lord?

|| *The word Batus in the originall conteineth nine gallons 3. quarts.*

6 And hee said, An hundred ||measures of oyle. And hee saide vnto him, Take thy bill, and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said hee to another, And how much owest thou? And hee said, An hundred ||measures of wheat. And hee saide vnto him, Take thy bill and write fourescore.

|| *The word here interpreted a measure, in the originall conteineth about foureteene bushels and a pottle.*

8 And the lord commended the vniust Steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

|| *Or, riches.*

9 And I say vnto you, Make to your selues friends of the ||Mammon of vnrighteousnesse, that when ye faile, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations.

10 Hee that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much.

|| *Or, riches.*

11 If therefore yee haue not bene faithfull in the vnrighteous ||Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye haue not bene faithful in that which is another mans, who shall giue you that which is your owne?

* Matth. 6. 24.

13 ¶ *No seruant can serue two masters, for either he will hate the one, and loue the other: or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other: yee cannot serue God and Mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who

were couetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said vnto them, Ye are they which iustifie your selues before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 *The law and the Prophets *were* vntill Iohn: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preasseth into it. *Matth. 11. 12.

17 *And it is easier for heauen and earth to passe, then one title of the law to faile. *Matth. 5. 18.

18 *Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, & marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery. *Matth. 5. 32.

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously euery day.

20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layde at his gate full of sores,

21 And desiring to bee fed with the crummes which fel from the rich mans table: moreouer the dogges came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift vp his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afarre off, and Lazarus in his bosome:

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, haue mercy on mee, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham saide, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life-time receiuedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus euill things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, betweene vs and you there is a great gulfe fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to vs, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I haue fiue brethren, that he may testifie vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets, let them heare them.

30 And hee said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went vnto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And hee said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ teacheth to auoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgiue another. 6 The power of faith. 7 How we are bound to God, and not he to vs. 11 Hee healeth ten lepers. 22 Of the kingdome of God, and the comming of the Sonne of man.

*Mat. 18. 7. THen said he vnto the disciples, *It is impossible but that offences will come, but wo vnto him through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and he cast into the Sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

*Mat. 18. 21. 3 ¶ Take heed to your selues: *If thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgiue him.

4 And if hee trespasse against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgiue him.

5 And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

*Mat. 17. 20. 6 *And the Lord said, If yee had faith as a graine of mustard seede, yee might say vnto this Sycamine tree, Be thou plucked vp by the root, and be thou planted in the sea, & it should obey you.

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say vnto him by & by when he is come from the field, Goe and sit downe to meate?

8 And will not rather say vnto him, Make ready wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, and serue me, till I haue eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eate and drinke.

9 Doeth he thanke that seruant, because hee did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shal haue done all those things which are commanded you, say, Wee are vnprofitable seruants: wee haue done that which was our duety to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went

to Hierusalem, that hee passed thorow the mids of Samaria and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine village, there met him tenne men that were lepers, which stood afarre off.

13 And they lifted vp their voices, and said, Iesus master haue mercy on vs.

14 And when he saw them, hee said vnto them, *Goe shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe, that as they went, they were cleansed. *Leu. 14. 2.

15 And one of them when hee sawe that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell downe on his face at his feet, giuing him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed, but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to giue glory to God, saue this stranger.

19 And he said vnto him, Arise, go thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the Pharises, when the kingdome of God should come, hee answered them, and said, The kingdome of God commeth not with ||obseruation. || *Or, with outward shew.*

21 Neither shall they say, Loe here, or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God is ||within you. || *Or, among you.*

22 And hee said vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 *And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: Goe not after them, nor follow them. *Mat. 24. 23.

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one part vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other part vnder heauen: so shall also the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must hee suffer many things, & be reiected of this generation.

26 *And as it was in the dayes of Noe: so shal it be also in the dayes of the Sonne of man. *Gen. 7.

27 They did eate, they dranke, they married wiues, they were giuen in mariage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

28 *Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eat, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded: *Gen. 19.

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen, & destroyed them all:

30 Euen thus shall it bee in the day when the Sonne of man is reuealed.

31 In that day he which shall be vpon the house top, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not returne backe.

*Gen. 19. 26.
32 *Remember Lots wife.

*Mat. 16. 25
33 *Whosoeuer shall seeke to saue his life, shall lose it, and whosoeuer shall lose his life, shall preserue it.

*Mat. 24. 40
34 *I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shal be taken, the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall bee grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

|| *This 36. verse is wanting in most of the Greek copies.*
36 ||Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

*Mat. 24. 28
37 And they answered, and said vnto him, *Where, Lord? And he said vnto them, Wheresoeuer the body is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Of the importunate widow. 9 Of the Pharisee and the Publicane. 15 Children brought to Christ. 18 A ruler that would folow Christ but is hindred by his riches. 28 The reward of them, that leaue all for his sake. 31 Hee foresheweth his death, 35 and restoreth a blinde man to his sight.

*1. Thes. 5. 17.
ANd he spake a parable vnto them, *to this ende*, that men ought *alwayes to pray, and not to faint,

2 Saying, There was in a city a Iudge, which feared not God neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widowe in that citie, and she came vnto him, saying, Auenge me of mine aduersarie:

4 And hee would not for a while. But afterward he said within himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will auenge her, lest by her continuall comming, she wearie me.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vniust iudge saith.

7 And shall not God auenge his owne elect, which crie day and night vnto him, thogh he beare long with them?

8 I tell you that he wil auenge them

speedily. Neuerthelesse, when the Son of man commeth, shall hee find faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselues ||that they were righteous, & despised other:

|| Or, as being righteous.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himselfe, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke, I giue tithes of all that I possesse.

13 And the Publicane standing afarre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes vnto heauen: but smote vpon his breast, saying, God me mercifull to mee a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went downe to his house iustified rather then the other: *For euery one that exalteth himselfe, shall be abased: and hee that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

*Matth. 23 12.

15 And they brought vnto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Suffer litle children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a litle child, shal in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what shall I doe to inherit eternall life?

19 *And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou mee good? None is good saue one, *that is* God.

*Matth. 19. 16.

20 Thou knowest the commaundements, Doe not commit adulterie, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth vp.

22 Now when Iesus heard these things, hee said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Iesus saw that hee was very sorrowfull, he said, How hardly shal they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God?

25 For it is easier for a camel to goe thorow a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saued?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

*Mat. 19. 27. 28 *Then Peter said, Loe, we haue left all, and followed thee.

29 And he said vnto them, Verily, I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receiue manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

*Mat. 20. 17. 31 ¶ *Then hee tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and al things that are written by the Prophets concerning the sonne of man, shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully intreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise againe.

34 And they vnderstood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

*Mat. 20. 29. 35 ¶ *And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sate by the way side, begging,

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they tolde him that Iesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Iesus thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that hee should holde his peace: but hee cried so much the more, Thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on mee.

40 And Iesus stood and commanded him to be brought vnto him: and when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall doe vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight, thy faith hath saued thee.

43 And immediately he receiued his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gaue praise vnto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Of Zacheus a Publicane. 11 The ten pieces of money. 28 Christ rideth into Hierusalem with triumph: 41 weepeth ouer it: 45 driueth the buiers and sellers out of the Temple: 47 teaching dayly in it. The rulers would haue destroyed him, but for feare of the people.

AND *Iesus* entred, and passed thorow Iericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the cheefe among the Publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus who he was, and could not for the prease, because he was litle of stature.

4 And he ranne before, and climed vp into a sycomore tree to see him, for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp and saw him, and said vnto him, Zacheus, make haste, & come downe, for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came downe, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said vnto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore, & if I haue taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him foure fold.

9 And Iesus said vnto him, This day is saluation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is the sonne of Abraham.

10 *For the sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost. *Matt. 18. 11.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Hierusalem, and because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediately appeare.

12 *He said therefore, A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and to returne. *Matt. 25. 14.

13 And hee called his ten seruants, and

||Mina here translated a pound, is twelue ounces and an halfe, which according to fiue shillings the ounce, is 3. pounds two shillings sixe pence.

and deliuered them ten ||pounds, and said vnto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We wil not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was returned, hauing receiued the kingdome, then hee commaunded these seruants to be called vnto him, to whom he had giuen the money, that hee might know how much euery man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said vnto him, Well, thou good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very little, haue thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained fiue pounds.

19 And hee said likewise to him, Bee thou also ouer fiue cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I haue kept layd vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest vp that thou layedst not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And hee saith vnto him, Out of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, thou wicked seruant: Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking vp that I layde not downe, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the bancke, that at my comming I might haue required mine owne with vsury?

24 And he said vnto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and giue it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.

*Matth. 13. 12.

26 For I say vnto you, *That vnto euery one which hath, shalbe giuen, and from him that hath not, euen that hee hath shalbe taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before mee.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

*Matth. 21. 1.

29 *And it came to passe when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethanie, at the mount called the mount

of Oliues, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Goe ye into the village ouer against you, in the which at your entring ye shall find a Colt tied, whereon yet neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man aske you, Why do ye loose him? Thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath neede of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found euen as hee had said vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said vnto them, Why loose ye the Colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Iesus: and they cast their garments vpon the Colt, and they set Iesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh euen now at the descent of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty workes that they had seene,

38 Saying, Blessed bee the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord, peace in heauen, and glory in the Highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude saide vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you, that if these should holde their peace, the stones would immediatly cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come neere, he beheld the city and wept ouer it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst knowen, euen thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong vnto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side,

44 And shall lay thee euen with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leaue in thee one stone vpon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 *And he went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought, *Matth. 21. 12.

46 Saying vnto them, It is written

ten, My house is the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

47 And he taught daily in the Temple. But the chiefe Priestes and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might doe: for all the people were ||very attentiue to heare him.

|| *Or, hanged on him.*

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ auoucheth his authoritie by a question of Iohns Baptisme. 9 The parable of the Vineyard. 19 Of giuing tribute to Cesar. 27 He conuinceth the Sadduces that denied the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the sonne of Dauid. 45 Hee warneth his disciples to beware of the Scribes.

*Matt. 21. 23.

AND *it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospel, the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came vpon him, with the Elders,

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs, by what authoritie doest thou these things? or who is hee that gaue thee this authoritie?

3 And hee answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answere me.

4 The Baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If wee shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeued yee him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence *it was.*

8 And Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

9 Then began hee to speake to the people this parable: *A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it foorth to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey for a long time.

*Mat. 21. 33.

10 And at the season, hee sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard, but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And againe hee sent another seruant, and they beat him also, and en-

treated him shamefully, and sent him away emptie.

12 And againe he sent the third, and they wounded him also, & cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued sonne: it may be they will reuerence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselues, saying, This is ẏͤ heire, come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard doe vnto them?

16 Hee shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall giue the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And hee beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, *The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner? *Psal. 118. 22.

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shalbe broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chiefe Priests and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent foorth spies, which should faine themselues iust men, that they might take holde of his words, that so they might deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, *Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God ‖truely. *Mat. 22. 16. ‖ *Or, of a trueth.*

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or no?

23 But he perceiued their craftines, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a ‖peny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars. ‖ *See Matt.* 18. 28.

25 And he said vnto them, Render therefore vnto Cesar the things which be Cesars, and vnto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take holde of his wordes before the people, and they marueiled at his answere, and helde their peace.

27 ¶ *Then

*Mat. 22. 23. 27 ¶ *Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, hauing a wife, and hee die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second tooke her to wife, and he died childlesse.

31 And the third tooke her, and in like maner the seuen also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seuen had her to wife.

34 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, The children of this world, marrie, and are giuen in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accompted worthy to obtaine that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marrie, nor are giuen in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

*Exod. 3. 6. 37 Now that the dead are raised, *euen Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the liuing; for all liue vnto him.

39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes answering, said, Master, Thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not aske him any question at all.

*Mat. 22. 42. 41 And he said vnto them, *How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne?

42 And Dauid himselfe saith in the booke of Psalmes, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

44 Dauid therefore calleth him, Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said vnto his disciples,

*Mat. 23. 5. 46 *Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walke in long robes, and loue greetings in the markets, and the highest seates in the Synagogues, and the chiefe roumes at feasts:

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ commendeth the poore widow. 5 Hee foretelleth the destruction of the Temple, and of the citie Hierusalem: 25 The signes also which shall be before the last day. 34 He exhorteth them to be watchfull.

AND he looked vp, *and saw the rich men casting their giftes into the treasurie. *Marke 12. 41.

2 And hee saw also a certaine poore widow, casting in thither two ||mites. ||*See Marke 12. 42.*

3 And he said, Of a truth, I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these haue of their abundance cast in vnto the offerings of God, but shee of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

5 ¶ *And as some spake of the Temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said, *Mat. 24. 1.

6 *As for* these things which yee behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shal not be left one stone vpon another, that shal not be throwen downe.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe wil there be, when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heede that yee be not deceiued: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth neere: goe yee not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall heare of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

10 *Then said he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: *Matt. 24. 7.

11 And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and famines, and pestilences: and fearefull sights and great signes shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, deliuering you vp to the Synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before Kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimony.

*Matth. 10. 19. 14 *Settle it therfore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answere.

15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisedome, which all your aduersaries shall not be able to gainsay, nor resist.

16 And yee shall be betrayed both by parents and brethren, and kinsefolkes and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake.

*Matth. 10. 30. 18 *But there shall not a haire of your head perish.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules.

*Matth. 24. 15. 20 *And when yee shall see Hierusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines, and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But woe vnto them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes, for there shalbe great distresse in the land, and wrath vpon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall bee led away captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shall be troden downe of the Gentiles, vntill the times of the Gentiles bee fulfilled.

*Matth. 24. 29. 25 ¶ *And there shalbe signes in the Sunne, and in the Moone, and in the Starres, and vpon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexity, the Sea and the waues roaring,

26 Mens hearts failing them for feare, and for looking after those things which are comming on the earth; For the powers of heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the sonne of man comming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads, for your redemptiou draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the figge tree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoot foorth, yee

see and know of your owne selues, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise yee, when yee see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selues, least at any time your hearts be ouercharged with surfetting, and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come vpon you vnawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray alwayes, that ye may be accompted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the sonne of man.

37 And in the day time he was teaching in the Temple, and at night hee went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Oliues.

38 And all the people came earely in the morning to him in the Temple, for to heare him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Iewes conspire against Christ. 3 Satan prepareth Iudas to betray him. 7 The Apostles prepare the Passeouer. 19 Christ instituteth his holy supper, 21 couertly foretelleth of the traitour, 24 dehorteth the rest of his Apostles from ambition, 31 assureth Peter his faith should not faile: 34 and yet he should denie him thrise. 39 He prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood, 47 is betrayed with a kisse: 50 hee healeth Malchus eare, 54 he is thrise denied of Peter, 63 shamefully abused, 66 and confesseth himselfe to be the sonne of God.

N*Ow ỷ feast of vnleuened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passeouer. *Matth. 26. 2.

2 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ *Then entred Satan into Iudas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelue. *Matth. 26. 14.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chiefe Priests and captaines,

taines, how he might betray him vnto them.

5 And they were glad, and couenanted to giue him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them ||in the absence of the multitude.

|| *Or, without tumult.*

*Matth. 26. 17.

7 ¶ *Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when the Passeouer must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate.

9 And they said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said vnto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And yee shall say vnto the goodman of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the ghest-chamber where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large vpper roume furnished, there make ready.

13 And they went, and found as hee had said vnto them, and they made readie the Passeouer.

*Matth. 26. 20.

14 *And when the houre was come, he sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him.

|| *Or, I haue heartily desired.*

15 And he said vnto them, ||With desire I haue desired to eate this Passeouer with you before I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, I will not any more eate thereof, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And hee tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and said, Take this, and diuide it among your selues.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the Vine, vntill the kingdome of God shall come.

*Matt. 26. 26.

19 ¶ *And hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes, and brake *it*, and gaue vnto them, saying, This is my body which is giuen for you, this doe in remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the New Testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

*Matth. 26. 21.

21 ¶ *But beholde, the hand of him that betrayeth mee, is with mee on the table.

22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it was determined, but woe

vnto that man by whom he is betraied.

23 And they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it was that should doe this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should bee accompted the greatest.

25 *And hee saide vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles *Matth.
exercise lordship ouer them, & they that exercise authoritie 20. 25.
vpon them, are called benefactors.

26 But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the yonger, and he that is chiefe, as he that doeth serue.

27 For whether is greater, hee that sitteth at meat, or hee that serueth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? But I am among you as he that serueth.

28 Ye are they which haue continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me,

30 That yee may eate and drinke at my table in my kingdome, *and sit on thrones iudging the twelue Tribes of Israel. *Matth.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, beholde, *Satan 19. 28. *1. Pet. 5.
hath desired *to haue* you, that he may fift you as wheat: 8.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not; and when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 And hee said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee both into prison, and to death.

34 *And hee said, I tell thee Peter, the cocke shall not *Matth.
crow this day, before that thou shalt thrise denie that thou 26. 34.
knowest me.

35 *And he said vnto them, When I sent you without *Matth.
purse, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they 10. 9.
said, Nothing.

36 Then saide hee vnto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and hee that hath no sword, let him sel his garment, and buy one.

37 For I say vnto you, that this that is written, must yet
be accomplished in me, *And he was reckoned among the *Esay. 53.
transgressors: For the things concerning me haue an end. 12.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And hee saide vnto them, It is ynough.

39 ¶ *And he came out, and went, as *Matth.
hee 26. 36.

hee was wont, to the mount of Oliues, and his disciples also followed him.

*Mat. 26. 41. 40 *And when he was at the place, he said vnto them, Pray, that yee enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawen from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remooue this cup from me: neuerthelesse, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from heauen, strengthening him.

44 And being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling downe to the ground.

45 And when he rose vp from prayer, and was come to his disciples, hee found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And said vnto them, Why sleepe yee? Rise, and pray, lest yee enter into temptation.

*Mat. 26. 47. 47 ¶ And while he yet spake, *behold, a multitude, and hee that was called Iudas, one of the twelue, went before them, and drewe neere vnto Iesus, to kisse him.

48 But Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall wee smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the seruant of the high Priest, and cut off his right eare.

51 And Iesus answered, and said, Suffer ye thus farre. And he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the chiefe Priests, and captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thiefe, with swords and staues?

53 When I was daily with you in the Temple, yee stretched foorth no hands against mee: but this is your houre, and the power of darkenesse.

*Mat. 26. 57. 54 ¶ *Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him into the high Priests house, and Peter followed afarre off.

*Mat. 26. 69. 55 *And when they had kindled a fire in the middes of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter sate downe among them.

56 But a certaine maide beheld him as he sate by the fire, and earnestly looked vpon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, & said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a trueth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cocke crew.

61 And the Lord turned, and looked vpon Peter; and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt deny me thrise.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that helde Iesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ *And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, *Mat. 27
& the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came together, and led 1.
him into their Councell, saying,

67 Art thou the Christ? Tell vs. And hee said vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue.

68 And if I also aske you, you will not answere me, nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter shal the sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God?
And hee said vnto them, *Ye say that I am. *Mark. 14.
71 And they said, What need we any further witnesse? 62.
For wee our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Iesus is accused before Pilate, and sent to Herode. 8 Herode mocketh him. 12 Herode and Pilate are made friends. 13 Barabbas is desired of the people, and is loosed by Pilate, and Iesus is giuen to be crucified. 27 He telleth the women that lament him, the destruction of Hierusalem: 34 Prayeth for his enemies. 39 Two euill doers are crucified with him. 46 His death. 50 His buriall.

ANd the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow peruerting the nation, and forbidding to giue tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himselfe is Christ a king.

*Matth. 27 11. 3 *And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Iewes? And he answered him, & said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then saide Pilate to the chiefe Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth vp the people, teaching thorowout all Iurie, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoone as he knew that hee belonged vnto Herods iurisdiction, hee sent him to Herode, who himselfe also was at Hierusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herode saw Iesus, he was exceeding glad, for hee was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and hee hoped to haue seene some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of warre set him at naught, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before, they were at enmitie betweene themselues.

*Matth. 27 23. 13 ¶ *And Pilate, when hee had called together the chiefe Priests, and the rulers, and the people,

14 Said vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerteth the people, and behold, I hauing examined him before you, haue found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and loe, nothing worthy of death is done vnto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessitie hee must release

one vnto them at the Feast.

18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release vnto vs Barabbas,

19 Who for a certaine sedition made in the citie, and for murder, was cast in prison.

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Iesus, spake againe to them:

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And hee said vnto them the third time, Why, what euill hath he done? I haue found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, & let him goe.

23 And they were instant with loud voyces, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voyces of them, and of the chiefe Priests preuailed.

24 And Pilate ||gaue sentence that it should be as they required. || *Or, assented.*

25 And he released vnto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired, but he deliuered Iesus to their will.

26 *And as they led him away, they laid hold vpon one Simon a Cyrenian, comming out of the countrey, and on him they laid the crosse, that hee might beare it after Iesus. *Matth. 27. 32.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed & lamented him.

28 But Iesus turning vnto them, said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For beholde, the dayes are comming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that neuer bare, and the paps which neuer gaue sucke.

30 *Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, Fall on vs, and to the hils, Couer vs. *Isa. 2. 19. hos. 10. 8. reuel. 6. 16.

31 *For if they doe these things in a green tree, what shalbe done in the drie? *1. Pet. 4. 17.

32 *And there were also two other malefactors led with him, to bee put to death. *Matth. 27 38.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called ||Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left. || *Or, the place of a skull.*

34 ¶ Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them, for they know not what they doe: And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, & the rulers also with them derided him, saying, Hee saued others, let him saue himselfe, if he be Christ, ẏͤ chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, comming to him, and offering him vineger,

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription also was written ouer him in letters of Greeke, and Latin, & Hebrew, *THIS IS THE KING OF THE IEWES.*

39 ¶ And one of ẏͤ malefactors, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Doest not thou feare God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed iustly; for we receiue the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord, remember me when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verily, I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 And it was about the sixt houre, and there was a darkenesse ouer all the ||earth, vntill the ninth houre.

|| *Or, land.*

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the temple was rent in the mids.

46 ¶ And when Iesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, *Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: And hauing said thus, he gaue vp the ghost.

*Psal. 31. 6.

47 Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood a farre off, beholding these things.

50 ¶ *And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, a counseller, and hee was a good man, and a iust.

*Mat. 27. 57.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deede of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Iewes (who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of God.)

52 This man went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus.

53 And he tooke it downe, and wrapped it in linnen, and layd it in a Sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein neuer man before was layd.

54 And that day was the Preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the Sepulchre, and how his body was layd.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments, and rested the Sabbath day, according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs Resurrection is declared by two Angels, to the women that come to the Sepulchre. 9 These report it to others. 13 Christ himselfe appeareth to the two disciples that went to Emmaus: 36 Afterwards he appeareth to the Apostles, and reproueth their vnbeleefe: 47 Giueth them a charge: 49 Promiseth the holy Ghost: 51 And so ascendeth into heauen.

NOw *vpon the first day of the weeke, very earely in the morning, they came vnto the Sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certaine others with them. *Mat. 28. 1.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the Sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said vnto them, Why seek ye ||the liuing among the dead? ||*Or, him that liueth.*

6 He is not heere, but is risen: *Remember how he spake vnto you when he was yet in Galilee, *Mat. 17. 23.

7 Saying, The Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the Sepulchre, and told all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the rest.

10 It was Marie Magdalene, & Ioanna, & Mary *the mother* of Iames, and

I 2

other women that were with them, which tolde these things vnto the Apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeued them not.

*Iohn 20. 6.

12 *Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the Sepulchre, and stowping downe, hee behelde the linnen clothes layd by themselues, and departed, wondering in himselfe at that which was come to passe.

*Marke 16. 12.

13 ¶ *And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emaus, which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drew neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that yee haue one to another as yee walke, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, answering, saide vnto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not knowen the things which are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And hee saide vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Concerning Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mighty in deede and word before God, and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe Priests and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But wee trusted that it had bene hee, which should haue redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women also of our company made vs astonished, which were early at the Sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his bodie, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which saide that he was aliue.

24 And certaine of them which were with vs, went to the Sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then hee saide vnto them, O fooles, and slow of heart to beleeue

all that the Prophets haue spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things, and to enter into his glorie?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the Prophets, hee expounded vnto them in all the Scriptures, the things concerning himselfe.

28 And they drew nigh vnto the village, whither they went, and hee made as though hee would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs, for it is towards euening, and the day is farre spent: And he went in, to tarrie with them.

30 And it came to passe, as hee sate at meate with them, hee tooke bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gaue to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he ||vanished out of their sight.

|| *Or, ceased to be seene of them.*

32 And they said one vnto another, Did not our heart burne within vs, while hee talked with vs by the way, and while hee opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, & how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ *And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe stood in the midst of them, and sayeth vnto them, Peace bee vnto you.

*Marke 16. 14.

37 But they were terrified, and afrighted, and supposed that they had seene a spirit.

38 And he said vnto them, Why are yee troubled, and why doe thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Beholde my hands and my feete, that it is I my selfe: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when hee had thus spoken, hee shewed them his handes and his feete.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondered, hee saide vnto them, Haue ye here any meat?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an hony combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And hee said vnto them, These are the words which I spake vnto you, while I was yet with you, yͭ all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, & in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes concerning me.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, & thus it behoued Christ to suffer, & to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name, among all nations, beginning

¶ The Gospel according

CHAP. I.

1 The Diuinitie, Humanitie, and Office of Iesus Christ. 15 The testimonie of Iohn. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.

IN the beginning was the Word, & the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

*Gen. 1. 1. 2 *The same was in the beginning with God.

*Col. 1. 16. 3 *All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not.

*Mat. 3. 1. 6 ¶ *There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeue.

8 Hee was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world.

*Heb. 11. 3. 10 Hee was in the world, and *the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

at Hierusalem.

48 And yee are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ *And behold, I send the promise of my Father vpon you: but tarie ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be indued with power from on high. *Iohn 15. 26. actes 1. 4.

50 ¶ And he led them out as farre as to Bethanie, and hee lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

51 *And it came to passe, while hee blessed them, hee was parted from them, and caried vp into heauen. *Mar. 16. 19. actes 1. 9.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem, with great ioy:

53 And were continually in the Temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

to S. Iohn.

11 Hee came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them gaue hee ‖power to become the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue on his Name: ‖ *Or, the right or priuiledge.*

13 Which were borne, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 *And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs (& we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and trueth. *Mat. 1. 16.

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that commeth after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his *fulnesse haue all wee receiued, and grace for grace. *Col. 1. 19.

17 For the Law was giuen by Moses, but grace and trueth came by Iesus Christ.

18 *No man hath seene God at any time: the onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him. *1. Iohn 4. 12. 1. tim. 6. 16.

19 ¶ And this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priests and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou ||that Prophet? And hee answered, No.

|| *Or, a Prophet.*

22 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? What sayest thou of thy selfe?

*Mat. 3. 3.

23 *He said, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wildernesse: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharises.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

*Mat. 3. 11. acts 19. 4.

27 *He it is, who comming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordane, where Iohn was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day, Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saith, Behold the Lambe of God, which ||taketh away the sinne of the world.

|| *Or, beareth.*

30 This is he of whom I said, After me commeth a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therfore am I come baptizing with water.

*Mat. 3. 16.

32 *And Iohn bare record saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heauen, like a Doue, and it abode vpon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, & remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record, that this is the sonne of God.

35 ¶ Againe the next day after, Iohn stood, and two of his disciples.

36 And looking vpon Iesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and they followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned, and saw them following, and saith vnto them, What seeke ye? They said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say being interpre-

ted, Master) where ||dwellest thou? || *Or, abidest.*

39 He saith vnto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was ||about the tenth houre. || *That was two houres before night.*

40 One of the two which heard Iohn speake, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his owne brother Simon, and saith vnto him, We haue found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, ||the Christ. || *Or, the anointed.*

42 And he brought him to Iesus. And when Iesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, ||a stone. || *Or, Peter.*

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe foorth into Galilee, & findeth Philip, & saith vnto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathaneel, and saith vnto him, We haue found him of whom *Moses in the Law, and the *Prophets did write, Iesus of Nazareth the sonne of Ioseph. *Gen. 49. 10. leuit. 18. 18. *Esai. 4. 2.

46 And Nathaneel said vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith vnto him, Come and see.

47 Iesus saw Nathaneel comming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed in whom is no guile.

48 Nathaneel sayeth vnto him, Whence knowest thou me? Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the figge tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathaneel answered, and saith vnto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God, thou art the king of Israel.

50 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I said vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the figge tree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And hee saith vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto you, heereafter yee shall see heauen open, and the Angels of God ascending, and descending vpon the sonne of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 Departeth into Capernaum, and to Ierusalem, 14 Where hee purgeth the temple of buyers and sellers. 19 He foretelleth his death and resurrection. 23 Many beleeued because of his miracles, but he would not trust himselfe with them.

ANd the third day there was a mariage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And both Iesus was called, and his disciples, to the mariage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Iesus saith vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saith vnto ẏͤ seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were set there sixe water pots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins apeece.

7 Iesus saith vnto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 And hee saith vnto them, Drawe out now, and beare vnto the gouernor of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the seruants which drew the water knew) the gouernor of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And saith vnto him, Euery man at the beginning doth set foorth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine vntill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 ¶ After this hee went downe to Capernaum, hee and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, & Iesus went vp to Hierusalem

14 And found in the Temple those that sold oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and the changers of money, sitting.

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cordes, he droue them all out of the Temple, and the sheepe & the oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables,

16 And said vnto them that sold doues Take these things hence, make not my fathers house an house of merchandize.

*Psal. 69. 9.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, *The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp.

18 ¶ Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *Destroy this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp. *Mat. 26. 61.

20 Then said the Iewes, Fourty and six yeres was this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore hee was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that hee had said this vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when hee was in Hierusalem at the Passeouer, in the feast day, many beleeued in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew al men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for hee knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration. 14 Of faith in his death. 16 The great loue of God towards the world. 18 Condemnation for vnbeliefe. 23 The baptisme, witnes & doctrine of Iohn concerning Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of ẏͤ Iewes:

2 The same came to Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi, wee know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can doe these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, except a man be borne ||againe, he cannot see the kingdome of God. || *Or, from aboue.*

4 Nicodemus saith vnto him, How can a man be borne when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, except a man be borne of water and of the spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh, and that which is borne of the spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I saide vnto thee, Ye must be borne ||againe. || *Or, from aboue.*

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tel whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: So is euery one that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, We speake that we doe know, and testifie that wee haue seene; and yee receiue not our witnesse.

12 If I haue tolde you earthly things, and ye beleeue not: how shall ye beleeue if I tell you of heauenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen, but hee that came downe from heauen, *euen* the Sonne of man which is in heauen.

*Num. 21. 9.

14 ¶ *And as Moses lifted vp the serpent in the wildernesse: euen so must the Sonne of man be lifted vp:

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life.

*1. Iohn 4. 9.

16 ¶ *For God so loued yͤ world, that he gaue his only begotten Sonne: that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life.

*Chap. 12. 47.

17 *For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saued.

18 ¶ He that beleeueth on him, is not condemned: but hee that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because hee hath not beleeued in the Name of the onely begotten Sonne of God.

*Cha. 1. 4.

19 And this is the condemnation, *that light is come into the world, and men loued darknesse rather then light, because their deedes were euill.

20 For euery one that doeth euill, hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, lest his deeds should be ||reproued.

|| *Or, discouered.*

21 But hee that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

*Chap. 4. 2.

22 ¶ After these things, came Iesus and his disciples into the land of Iudea, and there hee taried with them, *and baptized.

23 ¶ And Iohn also was baptizing in Aenon, neere to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Iordane, *to whom thou barest witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. *Chap. 1. 7, 34.

27 Iohn answered, and said, *A man can ||receiue nothing, except it be giuen him from heauen. *Heb. 5. 4. || *Or, take vnto himselfe.*

28 Ye your selues beare me witnesse, that I said, *I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. *Chap. 1. 20.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the friend of the bridegrome, which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of the bridegromes voice: This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 Hee must increase, but I must decrease.

31 Hee that commeth from aboue, is aboue all: hee that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: hee that cōmeth from heauen is aboue all:

32 And what hee hath seene and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiueth his testimony:

33 He that hath receiued his testimonie, *hath set to his seale, that God is true. *Rom. 3. 4.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: For God giueth not the Spirit by measure *vnto him.*

35 *The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath giuen al things into his hand. *Matth. 11. 27.

36 *He that beleeueth on the Sonne, hath euerlasting life: and he that beleeueth not the Sonne, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him. *Habac. 2. 4. 1. iohn 5. 10.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and reueileth himselfe vnto her. 27 His disciples marueile. 31 He declareth to them his zeale to Gods glory. 39 Many Samaritanes beleeue on him. 43 He departeth into Galile, and healeth the Rulers sonne that lay sicke at Capernaum.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized moe disciples then Iohn,

2 (Though Iesus himselfe baptized not, but his disciples:)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.

4 And hee must needs goe thorow Samaria.

5 Then commeth he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neere to the parcell of ground *that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph.

*Gen. 33. 19. and 48. 22. iosh. 24. 23.

6 Now Iacobs Well was there. Iesus therefore being wearied with his iourney, sate thus on the Well: and it was about the sixth houre.

7 There commeth a woman of Samaria to draw water: Iesus sayth vnto her, Giue me to drinke.

8 For his disciples were gone away vnto the city to buy meate.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou, being a Iewe, askest drinke of me, which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes haue no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that sayth to thee, Giue me to drinke; thou wouldest haue asked of him, and hee would haue giuen thee liuing water.

11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to drawe with, and the Well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that liuing water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the Well, and dranke thereof himselfe, and his children, and his cattell?

13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoeuer drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe:

14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shal giue him, shall neuer thirst: but the water that I shall giue him, shalbe in him a well of water springing vp into euerlasting life.

15 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, giue me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Goe, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband:

18 For thou hast had fiue husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: In that saidest thou truely.

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perceiue that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say, that *in Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship. * Deu. 12. 5.

21 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, beleeue me, the houre commeth when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet at Hierusalem, worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit, and in trueth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 *God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit, and in trueth. *2. Cor. 3. 17.

25 The woman saith vnto him, I know that Messias commeth, which is called Christ: when he is come, hee will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus sayth vnto her, I that speake vnto thee, am hee.

27 ¶ And vpon this came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou, or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and sayth to the men,

29 Come, see a man, which tolde me all things that euer I did: Is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate.

32 But hee said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eate?

34 Iesus saith vnto them, My meat is, to doe the will of him that sent mee, and to finish his worke.

35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then commeth haruest? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the fields: *for they are white already to haruest. *Mat. 9. 37.

36 And hee that reapeth receiueth wages, and gathereth fruite vnto life eternall: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may reioyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true: One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent

38 I sent you to reape that, whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and yee are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleeued on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, Hee told me all that euer I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they besought him that he would tarie with them, and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many moe beleeued, because of his owne word:

42 And said vnto the woman, Now we beleeue, not because of thy saying, for we haue heard him our selues, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Sauiour of the world.

*Matth. 13 57.

43 ¶ *Now after two dayes he departed thence, and went into Galilee:

44 For Iesus himselfe testified, that a Prophet hath no honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then when hee was come into Galilee, the Galileans receiued him, hauing seene all the things that hee did at Hierusalem at the Feast: for they also went vnto the Feast.

*Chap. 2. 1

|| *Or, Courtier, or ruler.*

46 So Iesus came againe into Cana of Galilee, *where hee made the water wine. And there was a certaine ||noble man, whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galilee, hee went vnto him, and besought him that he would come downe, and heale his sonne: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, yee will not beleeue.

49 The noble man saith vnto him, Syr, come downe ere my child die.

50 Iesus saith vnto him, Go thy way, thy sonne liueth. And the man beleeued the word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his seruants met him, and told him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then inquired hee of them the houre when he began to amend: and they said vnto him, Yesterday at the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 So the father knewe that it was at the same houre, in the which Iesus said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth, and himselfe beleeued, and his whole house.

54 This is againe the second miracle that Iesus did, when hee was come out of Iudea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Iesus on the Sabbath day cureth him that was diseased eight & thirtie yeeres. 10 The Iewes therefore cauill, and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himselfe, and reprooueth them, shewing by the testimonie of his Father, 32 of Iohn, 36 of his workes, 39 and of the Scriptures, who he is.

AFter *this there was a feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem. *Leuit. 23. 2. deut. 16.

2 Now there is at Hierusalem by the sheepe ||*market*, a poole, which is called in the Hebrew tongue *Bethesda*, hauing fiue porches. || *Or, gate.*

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folke, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had an infirmitie thirtie and eight yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, & knew that hee had beene now a long time in that case, he sayth vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I haue no man when the water is troubled, to put mee into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus sayth vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: And on the same day was the Sabbath.

10 ¶ The Iewes therefore said vnto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day, *it is not lawfull for thee to cary thy bed. *Ier. 17. 22

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Iesus

had conueyed

himselfe away, ||a multitude being in that place. || *Or, from the multitude that was.*

14 Afterward Iesus findeth him in the Temple, & said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 The man departed, and tolde the Iewes that it was Iesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Iewes persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

17 ¶ But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, & I worke.

18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him, not onely because hee had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his father, making himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and saide vnto them, Verily, verily I say vnto you, The sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, but what he seeth the Father doe: for what things soeuer he doeth, these also doth the sonne likewise.

20 For the father loueth the sonne, and sheweth him all things that himselfe doth: & he will shew him greater works then these, that ye may marueile.

21 For as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them: euen so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man: but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne:

23 That all men should honour the Son, euen as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not ẏͤ Sonne, honoreth not ẏͤ Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily, verily I say vnto you, Hee that heareth my word, & beleeueth on him that sent mee, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death vnto life.

25 Verily, verily I say vnto you, The houre is comming, & now is, when the dead shall heare the voice of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe: so hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe:

27 And hath giuen him authority to execute iudgement also, because he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre is comming, in the which all that are in the graues shall heare his voice, *Matth. 25. 46.

29 And shall come foorth, *they that

haue done good, vnto the resurrection of life, and they that
haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of damnation.

30 I can of mine owne selfe doe nothing: as I heare, I
iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine
owne will, but the will of the Father, which hath sent me.

31 *If I beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse is not true. *Chap. 8.

32 ¶ *There is another that beareth witnesse of me, & I 14.
know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true. *Matth. 3. 17.

33 Ye sent vnto Iohn, *and he bare witnesse vnto the *Chap. 1.
trueth. 7

34 But I receiue not testimonie from man: but these things
I say, that ye might be saued.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were
willing for a season to reioyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I haue greater witnesse then that of Iohn: for
the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the
same workes that I doe, beare witnesse of mee, that the
Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himselfe which hath sent me, *hath *Matth. 3.
borne witnesse of me. Ye haue neither heard his voyce at 17. and 17. 5.
any time, *nor seene his shape. *Deut. 4.

38 And ye haue not his word abiding in you: for whom 12.
he hath sent, him ye beleeue not.

39 ¶ Search the Scriptures, for in them ye thinke ye haue
eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in
you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receiue me not:
if another shall come in his owne Name, him ye will receiue.

44 *How can ye beleeue, which receiue honour one of *Chap. 12.
another, & seeke not the honour that commeth from God 43.
onely?

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to the Father:
there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses, in whom ye
trust?

46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued
me: *for he wrote of me. *Gen. 3.

47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how shall ye beleeue 15. deut.
my words? 18. 15

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth fiue thousand men with fiue loaues and two fishes. 15 Thereupon the people would haue made him King. 16 But withdrawing himselfe, he walked on the sea to his disciples: 26 Reprooueth the people flocking after him, and all the fleshly hearers of his word: 32 Declareth himselfe to be the Bread of life to beleeuers. 66 Many disciples depart from him. 68 Peter confesseth him. 70 Iudas is a deuil.

AFter these things Iesus went ouer the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias:

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which hee did on them that were diseased.

3 And Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there hee sate with his disciples.

*Leuit. 23. 5. deut. 16. 1.

4 *And the Passeouer, a feast of the Iewes, was nigh.

*Matt. 14. 15.

5 ¶ *When Iesus then lift vp his eyes, and saw a great company come vnto him, he saith vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eate?

6 (And this he said to proue him: for he himselfe knew what he would doe)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred peny-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a litle.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith vnto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath fiue barley loaues, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus said, Make the men sit downe. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the loaues, and when he had giuen thankes, hee distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set downe, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the fragments that remaine, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelue baskets with the fragments of the fiue barley loaues, which remained ouer and aboue, vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, said, This is of a trueth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Iesus therefore perceiued that they would come and take him by force, to make him a King, hee departed againe into a mountaine, himselfe alone.

16 *And when euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea, *Matth. 14. 23.

17 And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea towards Capernaum: and it was now darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great winde that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about fiue and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they see Iesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh vnto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith vnto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly receiued him into the ship, and immediatly the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, saue that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone:

23 Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh vnto the place where they did eate bread, after that the Lord had giuen thankes:

24 When the people therefore saw that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they saide vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Ye seeke me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because yee did eate of the loaues, and were filled.

27 ||Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: *for him hath God the Father sealed. ||*Or, worke not.* *Matth. 3. 17.

28 Then said they vnto him, What

shall we doe, that we might worke the workes of God?

*1. Ioh. 3. 23. 29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and beleeue thee? What doest thou worke?

*Exod. 16. 15. numb. 11. 7. *Psal. 78. 25. 31 *Our fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as it is written, *He gaue them bread from heauen to eate.

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you the true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then said they vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am the bread of life: hee that commeth to me, shall neuer hunger: and he that beleeueth on me, shall neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.

37 All that the Father giueth mee, shall come to mee; and him that commeth to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers wil which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen mee, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that euery one which seeth the Sonne, and beleeueth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because hee said, I am the bread which came downe from heauen.

*Mat. 13. 55. 42 And they said, *Is not this Iesus the sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that hee sayth, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus therefore answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

*Esai 54. 13. iere. 31. 34. 45 *It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me,

46 Not that any man hath seene the Father; *saue hee which is of God, hee hath seene the Father. *Mat. 11. 27.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that beleeueth on me, hath euerlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which commeth downe from heauen, that a man may eate thereof, and not die.

51 I am the liuing bread, which came downe from heauen. If any man eate of this bread, he shall liue for euer: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 The Iewes therefore stroue amongst themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except yee eate the flesh of the sonne of man, and drinke his blood, yee haue no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meate indeed, and my blood is drinke indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the liuing Father hath sent me, and I liue by the Father: so, he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers did eate Manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall liue for euer.

59 These things said hee in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying, who can heare it?

61 When Iesus knew in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at it, hee said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 * *What* and if yee shall see the sonne of man ascend vp where hee was before? *Cha. 3. 13.

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes

that I speake vnto you, they are Spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not. For Iesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it were giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we goe? Thou hast the words of eternall life.

*Matth. 16 16.

69 *And we beleeue and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

71 He spake of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for hee it was that should betray him, being one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

Iesus reprooueth the ambition and boldnesse of his kinsemen: 10 goeth vp from Galilee to the feast of Tabernacles, 14 teacheth in the Temple. 40 Diuers opinions of him among the people. 45 The Pharisees are angry that their officers tooke him not, & chide with Nicodemus for taking his part.

AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galilee: for hee would not walk in Iurie, because the Iewes sought to kill him.

*Leuit. 23.

2 *Now the Iewes feast of Tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore saide vnto him, Depart hence, and go into Iudea, that thy Disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in secret, and hee himselfe seeketh to be knowen openly: If thou doe these things, shew thy selfe to ye world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleeue in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that

the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe ye vp vnto this feast: I goe not vp yet vnto this feast, *for my time is not yet full come. *Cha. 8. 20

9 When he had said these words vnto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people, concerning him: For some said, Hee is a good man: Others said, Nay, but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 ¶ Now about the middest of the feast, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this man ||letters, hauing neuer learned? || *Or, learning.*

16 Iesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnesse is in him.

19 *Did not Moses giue you the Law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the Law? *Why goe ye about to kill me? *Exo. 24. 3. *Cha. 5. 18

20 The people answered, and sayd, Thou hast a deuill: Who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, I haue done one worke, and yee all marueile.

22 *Moses therefore gaue vnto you Circumcision (not because it is of Moses, *but of the fathers) and yee on the Sabbath day circumcise a man. *Leui. 12. 3 *Gen. 17. 10

23 If a man on the Sabbath day receiue circumcision, ||that the Lawe of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath day? || *Or, without breaking the Law of Moses.*

24 *Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement. *Deu. 1. 16

25 Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this hee, whome they seeke to kill?

26 But loe, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing vnto him: Doe the

rulers know indeede that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit wee know this man whence he is: but when Christ commeth, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Iesus in the Temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleeued on him, & said, When Christ commeth, will hee doe moe miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: And the Pharisees and the chiefe Priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet a litle while am I with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent me.

*Chap. 13. 33.

34 *Ye shall seeke me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither yee cannot come.

35 Then saide the Iewes among themselues, Whither will hee goe, that we shall not find him? will he goe vnto the dispersed among the ||Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

|| *Or, Greeks.*

36 What maner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not find me? and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

*Leuit. 23. 36.

37 *In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus stood, and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke.

*Deut. 18. 15.

38 *He that beleeueth on me, as the Scripture hath saide, out of his belly shall flow riuers of liuing water.

*Ioel. 2. 28. esai. 44. 3.

39 *(But this spake he of the Spirit which they that beleeue on him, should receiue. For the holy Ghost was not yet *giuen*, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, saide, Of a trueth this is the Prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

*Mat. 2. 5.

42 *Hath not the Scripture saide, that Christ commeth of the seede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Beth-

lehem, where Dauid was?

43 So there was a diuision among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man layed hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chiefe Priests and Pharises, and they said vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceiued?

48 Haue any of the rulers, or of the Pharises beleeued on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the Law, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith vnto them, (*He that came to Iesus by night, being one of them,) *Chap. 3. 2.

51 *Doth our Law iudge any man before it heare him, & know what he doth? *Deut. 17. 10. and 19. 15.

52 They answered, and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and looke: for out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ deliuereth the woman taken in adultery. 12 He preacheth himselfe the light of the world, and iustifieth his Doctrine: 33 Answereth the Iewes that boasted of Abraham, 59 And conueigheth himselfe from their crueltie.

IEsus went vnto yͤ Mount of Oliues:

2 And earely in the morning hee came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he sate downe, and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought vnto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the mids,

4 They say vnto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 *Now Moses in the Law commanded vs, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? *Leuit. 20. 10.

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might haue to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, hee lift vp himselfe, and saide vnto them, *Hee that is without sinne among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

*Deut. 17. 7.

8 And againe, hee stouped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being conuicted by their owne conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, euen vnto the last: and Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe, and saw none but the woman, hee said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? Hath no man condemned thee?

11 She saide, No man, Lord. And Iesus saide vnto her, Neither doe I condemne thee: Goe, and sinne no more.

*Chap. 1. 5. and 9. 5.

12 ¶ Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, *I am the light of the world: he that followeth mee, shall not walke in darkenesse, but shall haue the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, Thou bearest record of thy selfe, thy record is not true.

*Chap. 5. 31.

14 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I goe.

15 Yee iudge after the flesh, I iudge no man.

16 And yet if I iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

*Deut. 17. 6. matt. 18. 16.

17 *It is also written in your Law, that the testimonie of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent mee, beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is thy Father? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had knowen mee, yee should haue knowen my Father also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasury, as hee taught in the Temple: and no man layd hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then saide Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, and ye shall seeke me, & shall die in your sinnes: Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will hee kill himselfe? because he saith, Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

23 And hee said vnto them, Yee are from beneath, I am from aboue: Yee are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, that ye shall die in your sinnes. For if yee beleeue not that I am hee, yee shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the same that I saide vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: But hee that sent mee is true, and I speake to the world, those things which I haue heard of him.

27 They vnderstood not that hee spake to them of the Father.

28 Then saide Iesus vnto them, When yee haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe: but as my Father hath taught mee, I speake these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left mee alone: for I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 As hee spake those words, many beleeued on him.

31 Then said Iesus to those Iewes which beleeued on him, If ye continue in my word, then are yee my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the Trueth, and the Trueth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abraham seed, and were neuer in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Yee shall be made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verily, verily I say vnto you, *Whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the seruant of sinne.

*Rom. 6. 20. 2. pet. 2. 19.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth euer.

36 If the Sonne therfore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that yee are Abrahams seed, but ye seeke to kill mee, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye do that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered, and said vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus sayth vnto them, If yee were Abrahams children, ye would doe the works of Abraham.

40 But now yee seeke to kill me, a man that hath tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye doe the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not borne of fornication, wee haue one Father, euen God.

42 Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father, yee would loue me, for I proceeded foorth, and came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe yee not vnderstand my speech? euen because yee cannot heare my word.

*1. Ioh. 3. 8. 44 *Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father ye will doe: hee was a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you conuinceth mee of sinne? And if I say the trueth, why doe ye not beleeue me?

*1. Ioh. 4. 6. 47 *He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say wee not well that thou art a Samaritane, & hast a deuill?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill: but I honour my Father, and ye doe dishonour me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne glory, there is one that seeketh & iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my saying, hee shall neuer see death.

52 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Now we know that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets: and thou sayest, If a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom

ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye haue not knowen him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shalbe a lyar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his saying.

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day: and he saw it, & was glad.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeeres olde, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him: but Iesus hidde himselfe, and went out of the Temple, going thorow the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 The man that was borne blinde restored to sight. 8 Hee is brought to the Pharises. 13 They are offended at it, and excommunicate him: 35 But hee is receiued of Iesus, and confesseth him. 39 Who they are whome Christ enlighteneth.

ANd as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blinde?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, *I am the light of the world.

*Chap. 1. 9.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spettle, and he ||anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

|| *Or, spread the clay vpon the eyes of the blinde man.*

7 And said vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therfore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seene him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is hee: others said, Hee is like him: but hee sayd, I am hee.

10 Therefore said they vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I receiued sight.

12 Then said they vnto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14 And it was the Sabbath day when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him how he had receiued his sight. He said vnto them, Hee put clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because hee keepeth not the Sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a diuision among them.

17 They say vnto the blind man againe, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, Hee is a Prophet.

18 But the Iewes did not beleeue concerning him, that hee had bin blind, and receiued his sight, vntill they called the parents of him that had receiued his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, who ye say was borne blind? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: hee is of age, aske him, he shall speake for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that was blind, and said vnto him, Giue God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered, and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: One thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then saide they to him againe, What did he to thee? How opened hee thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye did not heare: wherfore would you heare it againe? Will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reuiled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 Wee know that God spake vnto Moses: as for this fellow, we knowe not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Why herein is a marueilous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man bee a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde:

33 If this man were not of God, he could doe nothing.

34 They answered, and saide vnto him, Thou wast altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? And they ‖cast him out.

‖ *Or, excommunicated him.*

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out; and when hee had found him, he said vnto him, Doest thou beleeue on the Sonne of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeue on him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Thou hast both seene him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleeue: and he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Iesus said, For iudgment I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see, and that they which see, might be made blind.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these words, and saide vnto him, Are wee blinde also?

41 Iesus saide vnto them, If yee were blind, ye should haue no sinne: but now ye say, We see, therfore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the doore and the good Shepheard. 19 Diuers opinions of him. 24 He proueth by his workes, that he is Christ the Sonne of God, 39 Escapeth the Iewes, 40 and went againe beyond Iordane, where many beleeued on him.

VErily, verily I say vnto you, He that entreth not by $\overset{e}{y}$ doore into the sheepefold, but climeth vp some other way, the same is a theefe, and a robber.

2 But hee that entreth in by the doore, is the shepherd of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth foorth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voyce.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him, for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not what things they were which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verily, verily I say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheepe.

8 All that euer came before me, are theeues and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am the doore; by me if any man enter in, he shall be saued, and shall goe in and out, and find pasture.

10 The theefe commeth not, but for to steale and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and that they might haue it more abundantly.

* Esai. 40. 11. ezech. 34. 23.

11 *I am the good shepheard: the good shepheard giueth his life for the sheepe.

12 But hee that is an hireling and not the shepheard, whose owne the sheepe are not, seeth the woolfe comming, and leaueth the sheep, and fleeth: and the woolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, & careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am the good shepheard, and know my sheepe, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the father knoweth me, euen so know I the father: & I lay downe my life for the sheepe.

16 And other sheepe I haue, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall heare my voyce; *and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepheard.

* Esai. 37. 22.

17 Therefore doth my father loue me, *because I lay downe my life that I might take it againe. *Esay. 53. 7, 8.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and I haue power to take it againe. *This commandement haue I receiued of my father. *Acts 2. 24.

19 ¶ There was a diuision therefore againe among the Iewes for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, He hath a deuill, and is mad, why heare ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuill. Can a deuill open the eyes of the blind?

22 ¶ And it was at Hierusalem the *feast of the dedication, & it was winter. *1. Macc. 4. 59.

23 And Iesus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, How long doest thou ||make vs to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell vs plainely. || *Or, hold vs in suspence.*

25 Iesus answered them, I told you, and ye beleeued not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleeue not, because ye are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand.

29 My father which gaue them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to plucke them out of my fathers hand.

30 I and my father are one.

31 Then the Iewes tooke vp stones againe to stone him.

32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I shewed you from my Father; for which of those workes doe ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For a good worke we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, *Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods? *Psal. 82. 6.

35 If hee called them gods, vnto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him, whom the father hath sanctified and sent into the world,

Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe, though yee beleeue not me, beleeue the works: that ye may know and beleeue that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought againe to take him: but hee escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away againe beyond Iordane, into the place where Iohn at first baptized: and there he abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus, foure dayes buried. 45 Many Iewes beleeue. 47 The high Priests and Pharisees gather a counsel against Christ. 49 Caiaphas prophecieth. 54 Iesus hid himselfe. 55 At the Passeouer they enquire after him, and lay wait for him.

NOw a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha.

*Matt, 26. 7. 2 (*It was that Mary which anoynted the Lord with oyntment, and wiped his feete with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)

3 Therefore his sister sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold, hee whom thou louest, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that, hee said, This sicknesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sicke, he abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, saith hee to his disciples, Let vs go into Iudea againe.

8 His disciples say vnto him, Master, the Iewes of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If any man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night,

hee stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things said hee, and after that, hee saith vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe, that I may awake him out of sleepe.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he shall doe well.

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that hee had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.

14 Then saide Iesus vnto them plainly, Lazarus is dead:

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent yee may beleeue:) Neuerthelesse, let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, vnto his fellow disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Iesus came, hee found that hee had lien in the graue foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethanie was nigh vnto Hierusalem, ||about fifteene furlongs off:)

|| *That is, about two mile.*

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha, and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soone as shee heard that Iesus was comming, went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then saide Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst bene here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that euen now, whatsoeuer thou wilt aske of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus saith vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha sayeth vnto him, *I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

Luke 14. 14. chap. 5. 29.

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection, and the *life: hee that beleeueth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he liue.

*Chap. 6. 35.

26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in mee, shall neuer die. Beleeuest thou this?

27 She saith vnto him, Yea Lord, I beleeue that thou art the Christ the Sonne of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when shee had so said, shee went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master

is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as she heard that, she arose quickely, and came vnto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, Shee goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, shee fell downe at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst beene here, my brother had not dyed.

33 When Iesus therefore sawe her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping which came with her, hee groned in the Spirit, and †was troubled,

† *Gr. Hee troubled himselfe.*

34 And said, Where haue ye laid him? They say vnto him, Lord, come, & see.

35 Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him.

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, *which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue caused that euen this man should not haue died?

*Chap. 9. 6.

38 Iesus therefore againe groning in himselfe, commeth to the graue. It was a caue, and a stone lay vpon it.

39 Iesus said, Take yee away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, sayth vnto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath beene dead foure dayes.

40 Iesus saith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou wouldst beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knewe that thou hearest me alwayes: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

43 And when hee thus had spoken, he cryed with a loude voice, Lazarus, come foorth.

44 And he that was dead, came forth, bound hand & foot with graue-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Iesus saith vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.

45 Then many of the Iewes which

came to Mary, and had seene the things which Iesus did, beleeued on him.

46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharises, and tolde them what things Iesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered yͤ chiefe Priests and the Pharises a councell, and said, What doe wee? for this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeue on him, and the Romanes shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high Priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye know nothing at all,

50 *Nor consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. *Chap. 18. 14.

51 And this spake he not of himselfe: but being high Priest that yeere, he prophecied that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation only, but that also hee should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day foorth, they tooke counsell together for to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes: but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wildernesse, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was nigh at hand, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues, as they stood in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chiefe Priests and the Pharises had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where hee were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Iesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flocke to see Lazarus. 10 The high Priests consult to kill him. 12 Christ rideth into Ierusalem. 20 Greekes desire to see Iesus. 23 He foretelleth his death. 37 The Iewes are generally blinded: 42 yet many chiefe rulers beleeue, but do not confesse him: 44 therfore Iesus calleth earnestly for confession of faith.

THen Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passouer, came to Bethanie, where Lazarus was, which had bene dead, whom hee raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them yͭ sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment, of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Iesus, & wiped his feet with her haire: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Iudas Iscariot, Simons sonne, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and giuen to the poore?

*Cha. 13. 29 6 *This he said, not that he cared for the poore: but because hee was a thiefe, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore alwayes yee haue with you: but me ye haue not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Iewes therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chiefe Priests consulted, yͭ they might put Lazarus also to death,

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Iewes went away and beleeued on Iesus.

*Cha. 21. 8. 12 ¶ *On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus was comming to Hierusalem,

13 Tooke branches of Palme trees, and went foorth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the king of Israel that cōmeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus, when he had found a yong asse, sate thereon, as it is written,

*Zach. 9. 9. 15 *Feare not, daughter of Sion, behold, thy King commeth, sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things vnderstood not his disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remēbred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out

of his graue, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that hee had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore saide among themselues, Perceiue ye how yee preuaile nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certaine Greeks among them, that came vp to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip which *was* of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Iesus.

22 Philip commeth and telleth Andrew: and againe Andrew and Philip told Iesus.

23 ¶ And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verely, verely, I say vnto you, Except a corne of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 *He that loueth his life, shall lose it: and hee that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

*Matth. 10. 39.

26 If any man serue me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my seruant be: If any man serue me, him will my father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled, and what shall I say? Father, saue me from this houre, but for this cause came I vnto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voice from heauen, *saying*, I haue both glorified it, and wil glorifie it againe.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said, that it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of mee, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me.

33 (This hee said, signifying what death he should die)

34 The people answered him, *We haue heard out of the Law, that Christ abideth for euer: and how sayest thou, The Sonne of man must bee lift vp? Who is this Sonne of man?

*Psal. 110. 4

35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walke while ye haue the light, lest darkdesse come vpon you: For he that walketh in darkenesse, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue light, beleeue in the light, that ye may bee the children of light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and did hide himselfe from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they beleeued not on him:

*Esai. 53. 1. rom. 10. 16.

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, which hee spake, *Lord, who hath beleeued our report? and to whom hath the arme of the Lord beene reuealed?

39 Therefore they could not beleeue, because that Esaias said againe,

*Mat. 13. 14.

40 *He hath blinded their eyes, and hardned their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, nor vnderstand with their heart, and be conuerted, and I should heale them.

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Neuerthelesse, among the chiefe rulers also, many beleeued on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should be put out of the Synagogue.

*Chap. 5. 44.

43 *For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God.

44 ¶ Iesus cried, and said, He that beleeueth on me, beleeueth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

*Chap. 3. 19.

46 *I am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth on me, should not abide in darkenesse.

*Chap. 3. 17.

47 *And if any man heare my words, and beleeue not, I iudge him not; For I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world.

*Marke 16 16.

48 He that reiecteth me, and receiueth not my words, hath one that iudgeth him: *yͤ word that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe; but the Father which sent me, he gaue me a commaundement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life euerlasting: whatsoeuer I speake therefore, euen as the Father said vnto me, so I speake.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Iesus washeth the disciples feete: exhorteth them to humilitie and charitie. 18 He foretelleth, and discouereth to Iohn by a token that Iudas should betray him: 31 Commandeth them to loue one another, 36 And forewarneth Peter of his deniall.

NOw *before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, hauing loued his owne which were in the world, he loued them vnto the end. *Mat. 26. 2.

2 And supper being ended (the deuill hauing now put into the heart of Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne to betray him.)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God:

4 He riseth from supper, and layed aside his garments, and tooke a towell, and girded himselfe.

5 After that, he powreth water into a bason, and beganne to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then commeth he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith vnto him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know heereafter.

8 Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feete only, but also my hands, and my head.

10 Iesus saith to him, He that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feet, but is cleane euery whit: and ye are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master and Lord, and ye say well: for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord and Master haue washed your feete, yee also

ought to wash one anothers feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that yee should doe, as I haue done to you.

*Matth. 10. 24. chap. 15. 20.

16 *Verily, verily I say vnto you, the seruant is not greater then his lord, neither he that is sent, greater then hee that sent him.

17 If yee know these things, happy are ye if ye doe them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue chosen: but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, *He that eateth bread with mee, hath lift vp his heele against me.

*Psal. 41. 10.

|| *Or, from henceforth.*

19 ||Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to passe, yee may beleeue that I am he.

*Matth. 10. 40.

20 *Verily, verily I say vnto you, he that receiueth whomsoeuer I send, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me.

*Matth. 26. 21.

21 *When Iesus had thus sayd, hee was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom hee spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Iesus bosome one of his disciples, whom Iesus loued.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that he should aske who it should be of whom he spake.

25 Hee then lying on Iesus breast, saith vnto him, Lord, who is it?

|| *Or, morsell.*

26 Iesus answered, Hee it is to whom I shall giue a ||soppe, when I haue dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gaue it to Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon.

27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him, Then said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew, for what intent he spake this vnto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Iudas had the bagge, that Iesus had sayd vnto him, Buy those things that wee haue need of against the feast: or that he should giue some thing to the poore.

30 He then hauing receiued the sop, went immediatly out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when hee was gone out, Iesus sayd, Now is the Sonne of man glorified: and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God

shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Litle children, yet a litle while I am with you. Ye
shall seeke mee, *and as I said vnto the Iewes, whither I go, *Chap. 7.
ye cannot come: so now I say to you. 34.

34 *A new commandement I giue vnto you, That yee *Chap. 15.
loue one another, as I haue loued you, that yee also loue one 17. leui. 19. 18. 1. iohn
another. 4. 21.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if yee haue loue one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why can not I follow thee
now? I will *lay downe my life for thy sake. *Matt. 26.
38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for 33.
my sake? Verily, verily I say vnto thee, the Cocke shall not crow, til thou hast denied me thrise.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Christ comforteth his Disciples with the hope of heauen: 6 professeth himselfe the Way, the Trueth, and the Life, and one with the Father: 13 Assureth their praiers in his Name to be effectuall: 15 Requesteth loue and obedience, 16 promiseth the holy Ghost the comforter, 27 and leaueth his peace with them.

LEt not your heart be troubled: yee beleeue in God, beleeue also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe and prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I goe yee know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Iesus saith vnto him, I am the Way, the Trueth, and the Life: no man commeth vnto the Father but by mee.

7 If ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and haue seene him.

8 Philip sayth vnto him, Lord,

shew vs the Father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus saith vnto him, Haue I bin so long time with you, and yet hast thou not knowen me, Philip? he that hath seene me, hath seene the father, and how sayest thou then, Shew vs the father?

10 Beleeuest thou not that I am in the father, and the father in mee? The words that I speake vnto you, I speak not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Beleeue me that I am in the Father, and the Father in mee: or else beleeue me for the very workes sake.

12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that beleeueth on me, the works that I doe, shall hee doe also, and greater workes then these shall he doe, because I goe vnto my Father.

*Mat. 7. 7.

13 *And whatsoeuer ye shall aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.

14 If ye shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 ¶ If ye loue me, keepe my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and hee shall giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer,

17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whom the world cannot receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for hee dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

|| *Or, orphanes.*

18 I wil not leaue you ||comfortlesse, I will come to you.

19 Yet a litle while, and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me, because I liue, ye shall liue also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, hee it is that loueth me: and he that loueth me shall be loued of my Father, and I will loue him, and will manifest my selfe to him.

22 Iudas saith vnto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, If a man loue mee, he will keepe my wordes: and my Father will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loueth mee not, keepeth not my sayings, and the word which you heare, is not mine, but the Fa-

thers which sent mee.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, *which is* the holy Ghost, whom the Father wil send in my name, he shal teach you al things, & bring al things to your remembrance, whatsoeuer I haue said vnto you.

27 Peace I leaue with you, my peace I giue vnto you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: let not your heart bee troubled, neither let it bee afraid.

28 Ye haue heard how I saide vnto you, I goe away, and come againe vnto you. If ye loued mee, yee would reioyce, because I said, I go vnto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I haue told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Heereafter I will not talke much with you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I loue the Father: and as the Father gaue me commandement, euen so I doe: Arise, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 The Consolation and mutuall loue betweene Christ and his members, vnder the parable of the vine. 18 A comfort in the hatred and persecution of the world. 26 The office of the holy Ghost, and of the Apostles.

I Am the true vine, and my Father is yͤ husbandman.

2 *Euery branch in me that beareth not fruit, hee *Mat. 15.
taketh away: and euery branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth 13.
it, that it may bring foorth more fruit.

3 *Now ye are cleane through the word which I haue *Iohn. 13.
spoken vnto you. 10.

4 Abide in me, and in you: As the branch cannot beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for
||without me ye can doe nothing. || *Or, seuered from me.*

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall aske what ye will, and it shall be done vnto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, so shall ye bee my Disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue ye in my loue.

10 If ye keepe my Commandements, ye shal abide in my loue, euen as I haue kept my Fathers Commandements, and abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

*Chap. 13. 34. 1. thes. 4. 9. 1. iohn 3. 11.

12 *This is my Commaundement, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue hath no man then this, that a man lay downe his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not seruants, for the seruant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I haue called you friends: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, I haue made knowen vnto you.

*Mat. 28. 19

16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and *ordeined you, that you should goe and bring foorth fruit, and that your fruite should remaine: that whatsoeuer ye shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you.

17 These things I commaund you, that ye loue one another.

18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would loue his owne: But because yee are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therfore the world hateth you.

*Chap. 13. 16. mat. 10. 24.

20 *Remember the word that I said vnto you, The seruant is not greater then the Lord: if they haue persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they haue kept my saying, they will keepe yours also.

21 But all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

‖ *Or, excuse.*

22 If I had not come, and spoken vnto them, they had not had sinne: but now they haue no ‖cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among thē the works which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they

both seene, & hated both me & my father.

25 But *this commeth to passe*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, *They hated me without a cause. *Psa. 35. 19.

26 *But when the Comforter is come, whom I wil send vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth from the Father, hee shall testifie of me. *Chap. 14. 26. luke 24 49.

27 And ye also shall beare witnesse, because ye haue bene with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his Disciples against tribulation by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his Resurrection and Ascension: 23 Assureth their prayers made in his Name to be acceptable to his Father. 33 Peace in Christ, and in the world affliction.

THese things haue I spoken vnto you, that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea, the time commeth, that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that hee doeth God seruice.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me.

4 But these things haue I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not vnto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent mee, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue saide these things vnto you, sorow hath filled your heart.

7 Neuerthelesse, I tell you the trueth, it is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, the Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, he will ||reproue the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement. || *Or, conuince*

9 Of sinne, because they beleeue not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I goe to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this world is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot beare them now:

13 Howbeit, when hee the spirit of trueth is come, he wil guide you into all trueth: For he shall not speake of himselfe: but whatsoeuer he shall heare, that shall he speake, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me, for he shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I that he shall take of mine, and shal shew it vnto you.

16 A litle while, and ye shall not see me: and againe a litle while, & ye shall see me: because I goe to the Father.

17 Then saide some of his disciples among themselues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, A litle while, and ye shal not see me: and againe, a litle while, and ye shall see me: and, because I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A litle while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they were desirous to aske him, & said vnto them, Doe ye enquire among your selues of that I saide, A litle while, and ye shall not see mee: and againe; A little while and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily I say vnto you, that ye shall weepe and lament, but the world shall reioyce: And ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into ioy.

21 A woman, when she is in trauaile, hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore haue sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your heart shall reioyce, and your ioy no man taketh from you.

*Mat. 7. 7.

23 And in that day ye shall aske me nothing: *Verily, verily I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer yee shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you.

24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

|| *Or, parables.*

|| *Or, parables.*

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in ||prouerbs: the time commeth when I shall no more speake vnto you in ||prouerbes, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day ye shall aske in my Name: and I say not

vnto you that I

will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, and haue beleeued that I came out from God.

28 I came foorth from the Father, and am come into the world: againe, I leaue the world, and goe to the Father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Loe, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ‖prouerbe.

‖ Or parable.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest al things, and needest not that any man should aske thee: By this we beleeue that thou camest foorth from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe yee now beleeue?

32 *Behold, the houre commeth, yea is now come, that ye shall be scattered, euery man to his ‖owne, and shall leaue me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

*Mat. 26. 31.

‖ Or, his owne home.

33 These things I haue spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace, in the world ye shall haue tribulation: but be of good cheare, I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him, 6 To preserue his Apostles 11 In vnitie, 17 And trueth, 20 To glorifie them, and all other beleeuers with him in heauen.

THese words spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee.

2 *As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to as many as thou hast giuen him.

*Mat. 28. 18.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Iesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5 And now O Father, glorifie thou me, with thine owne selfe, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue manifested thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were; and thou gauest them me; and they haue kept thy word.

7 Now they haue knowen that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the words which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued them, *and haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and they haue beleeued that thou didst send me.

*Chap. 16. 27.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world: but for them which thou hast giuen me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine owne Name, those whom thou hast giuen mee, that they may bee one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest me, I haue kept, and none of them is lost, but the sonne of perdition: *that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

*Psal. 109. 7.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speake in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues.

14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keepe them from the euill.

16 They are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth: thy word is trueth.

18 As thou hast sent mee into the world: euen so haue I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my selfe, that they also might be ||sanctified through the trueth.

||*Or, truely sanctified.*

20 Neither pray I for these alone; but for them also which shall beleeue on me through their word:

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in mee, and I in thee, that they also may bee one in vs: that the world may beleeue that thou hast sent mee.

22 And the glory which thou gauest me, I haue giuen them: that they may be one, euen as we are one:

23 I in them, and thou in mee, that they may bee made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

24 *Father, I will that they also whom thou hast giuen me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast giuen mee: for thou louedst mee before the foundation of the world. *Chap. 12. 26.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the loue wherewith thou hast loued mee, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Iudas betrayeth Iesus. 6 The Officers fall to the ground. 10 Peter smiteth off Malchus eare. 12 Iesus is taken, and led vnto Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peters deniall. 19 Iesus examined before Caiaphas. 28 His arraignment before Pilate. 36 His Kingdome. 40 The Iewes aske Barabbas to be let loose.

WHen Iesus had spoken these wordes, *hee went foorth with his disciples ouer the Brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which hee entred and his disciples. *Matth. 26. 36.

2 And Iudas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 *Iudas then hauing receiued a band of men, and officers from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, commeth thither with lanternes and torches, and weapons. *Matth. 26. 47.

4 Iesus therefore knowing all things that should come vpon him, went foorth, and sayde vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith vnto them, I am hee. And Iudas also which betraied him, stood with them.

6 Assoone then as he had said vnto them, I am he, they went backeward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked hee them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I haue tolde you that I am he: If therefore ye seeke me, let these goe their way:

9 That

*Chap. 17. 12.

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, *Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drewe it, and smote the high Priests seruant, & cut off his right eare: The seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my father hath giuen me, shall I not drinke it?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and officers of the Iewes, tooke Iesus, and bound him,

||*And Annas sent Christ bound vnto Caiaphas the high Priest, ver. 24.*

13 And led him away to Annas first, (for he was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high Priest that same yeere.||

*Chap. 11. 50.

14 *Now Caiaphas was he which gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

*Mat. 26. 58.

15 ¶ *And Simon Peter followed Iesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was knowen vnto the high Priest, and went in with Iesus into the palace of the high Priest.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple, which was knowen vnto the high Priest, and spake vnto her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damosell that kept the doore vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He sayth, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coales, (for it was colde) and they warmed themselues: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I euer taught in the Synagogue, and in the Temple, whither the Iewes alwayes resort, and in secret haue I said nothing:

21 Why askest thou me? Aske them which heard me, what I haue said vnto them: behold, they know what I said.

||*Or, with a rod.*

22 And when hee had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, stroke Iesus ||with the palme of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the hie priest so?

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue spoken euill, beare witnesse of the euill: but if well, why smitest thou me?

*Mat. 26. 57.

24 *Now Annas had sent him bound

vnto Caiaphas the high Priest.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe: *They said therefore vnto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? Hee denied it, and said, I am not.

*Mat. 26. 69.

26 One of the seruants of the high Priests (being his kinsman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crew.

28 ¶ *Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas vnto ||the hall of Iudgement: And it was earely, *and they themselues went not into the Iudgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the Passeouer.

*Mat. 27. 2.
|| *Or, Pilats house.*
*Acts 10. 28.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered, & said vnto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not haue deliuered him vp vnto thee.

31 Then saide Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him according to your law. The Iewes therefore said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death:

32 *That the saying of Iesus might be fulfilled, which hee spake, signifying what death he should die.

*Mat. 20. 19.

33 *Then Pilate entred into the Iudgement hall againe, and called Iesus, and saide vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?

*Mat. 27. 11.

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy selfe? or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iew? Thine owne nation, and the chiefe Priests haue deliuered thee vnto mee: What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my seruants fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore saide vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou saiest that I am a King. To this end was I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth heareth my voice.

38 Pilate saith vnto him, What is trueth? And when hee had said this,

he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and saith vnto them, I find in him no fault at all.

*Matth. 27 15. 39 *But yee haue a custome that I should release vnto you one at the Passeouer: will ye therefore that I release vnto you the king of the Iewes?

*Act. 3. 14. 40 *Then cried they all againe, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thornes, and beaten. 4 Pilate is desirous to release him, but being ouercome with the outrage of the Iewes, he deliuered him to bee crucified. 23 They cast lots for his garments. 26 He commendeth his mother to Iohn. 28 Hee dieth. 31 His side is pierced. 38 He is buried by Ioseph and Nicodemus.

*Matth. 27. 26. THen *Pilate therfore tooke Iesus, and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Haile king of the Iewes: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went foorth againe, and saith vnto them, Behold, I bring him foorth to you, that yee may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing the crowne of thornes, and the purple robe: and *Pilate* saith vnto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chiefe Priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a law, and by our law he ought to die, because hee made himselfe the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid,

9 And went againe into the iudgement hall, & saith vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him no answere.

10 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not, that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therfore

he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 And from thencefore Pilate sought to release him: but the Iewes cried out, saying, If thou let this man goe, thou are not Cesars friend: whosoeuer maketh himselfe a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Iesus foorth, and sate downe in the iudgement seate, in a place that is called the pauement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and he saith vnto the Iewes, Beholde your King.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The chiefe Priests answered, Wee haue no king but Cesar.

16 *Then deliuered he him therfore vnto them to be *Matth.
crucified: and they took Iesus, and led him away. 27. 31.

17 And he bearing his crosse, went foorth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrewe, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the middest.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. And the writing was, *IESVS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE IEWES.*

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nigh to the citie, and it was written in Hebrewe, and Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the chiefe Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Iewes: but that he said, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

23 ¶ *Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, *Matth.
tooke his garments, (and made foure parts, to euery souldier 27 35.
a part) and also his coat: Now the coate was without seame,
||wouen from the top thorowout. || *Or,*

24 They said therefore among themselues, Let not vs rent *wrought.*
it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall bee: *that the Scripture *Psal. 22.
might bee fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment 18
among them, and for my vesture they did cast
lots.

lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary *the wife* of ||Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. || *Or, Clopas.*

26 When Iesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he saith vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that houre that disciple tooke her vnto his owne home.

28 ¶ After this, Iesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, *that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. *Psal. 69. 22.

29 Now there was set a vessell, full of vineger: And they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it vpon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Iesus therefore had receiued the vineger, he said, It is finished, and he bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the Crosse on the Sabbath day (for that Sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that hee saith true, that yee might beleeue.

36 For these things were done, *that the Scripture should be fulfilled, *A bone of him shall not be broken. *Num. 9. 12. exod. 12 46. *Psa. 34. 21

37 *And againe another Scripture saith, They shall looke on him whom they piersed. *Zach. 12. 10.

38 ¶ *And after this, Ioseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Iesus, and Pilate gaue him leaue: he came therefore, and tooke the body of Iesus. *Mat. 27. 57.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Iesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight.*

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, & wound it in linnen clothes, with the spices, as the maner of the Iewes is to burie:

41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new Sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet layd.

42 There laid they Iesus therefore, because of the Iewes preparation day, for the Sepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary commeth to the Sepulchre. 3 So doe Peter and Iohn ignorant of the Resurrection. 11 Iesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 And to his Disciples. 24 The incredulitie, and confession of Thomas. 30 The Scripture is sufficient to saluation.

T*He first day of the weeke, commeth Mary Magdalene earely when it was yet darke, vnto the Sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the Sepulchre. *Mat. 28. 1. mark. 16. 1.

2 Then she runneth and commeth to Simon Peter, and to the *other disciple whom Iesus loued, and saith vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the Sepulchre, and we know not where they haue laid him. *Chap. 13. 23. and 21. 20.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the Sepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the Sepulchre.

5 And he stouping downe and looking in, saw the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then commeth Simon Peter following him, and went into the Sepulchre, and seeth the linnen clothes lie,

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the Sepulchre, and he saw, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that hee must rise againe from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: & as shee wept, she stouped downe, and looked into the Sepulchre.

12 And seeth two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the body of Iesus had layen:

13 And they say vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? Shee saith vnto them, Because they haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue laied him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned herselfe backe, and saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardiner, saith vnto him, Sir, if thou haue borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laied him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Mary. She turned herselfe, and saith vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and your Fâther, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that shee had seene the Lord, and that hee had spoken these things vnto her.

*Marke 16. 14.

19 ¶ *Then the same day at euening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus, and stood in the midst, and saith vnto them, Peace bee vnto you.

20 And when hee had so saide, hee shewed vnto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: As my Father hath sent me, euen so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, hee breathed on them, and saith vnto them, Receiue ye the holy Ghost.

*Matth. 18. 18.

23 *Whose soeuer sinnes yee remit, they are remitted vnto them, and whose soeuer sinnes yee retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord. But he said vnto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeue.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *Then* came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be vnto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and beholde my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and bee not faithlesse, but beleeuing.

28 And Thomas answered, and said vnto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene mee, thou hast beleeued: blessed are they that haue not seene, and yet haue beleeued.

30 ¶ *And many other signes truely did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke: *Chap. 21. 25.

31 But these are written, that yee might beleeue that Iesus is the Christ the Sonne of God, and that beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appearing againe to his disciples was knowen of them by the great draught of fishes. 12 Hee dineth with them: 15 earnestly commandeth Peter to feed his Lambes and sheepe: 18 Foretelleth him of his death: 22 Rebuketh his curiositie touching Iohn. 25 The conclusion.

AFter these things Iesus shewed himselfe againe to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and on this wise shewed he himselfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaneel of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith vnto them, I goe a fishing. They say vnto him, Wee also goe with thee. They went foorth and entred into a ship immediatly, and that night they caught nothing.

now come, Iesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus.

‖ *Or, Sirs.* 5 Then Iesus saith vnto them, ‖Children, haue ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said vnto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and yee shall finde. They cast therfore, and now they were not able to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that Disciple whome Iesus loued, saith vnto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coate vnto him, (for hee was naked) & did cast himselfe into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a litle ship (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundred cubites) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coales there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus saith vnto them, Bring of the fish, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, & drewe the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fiftie and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come, and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, and giueth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is nowe the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that hee was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou mee more then these? He saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feed my lambes.

16 He saith to him againe the second

time, Simon sonne of Ionas, louest thou me? He saith vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

17 He said vnto him the third time, Simon sonne of Ionas, louest thou mee? Peter was grieued, because hee saide vnto him the third time, Louest thou me? And he said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus sayth vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

18 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, whē thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carie thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake hee, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he sayth vnto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the Disciple *whom Iesus loued, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is hee that betraieth thee? *Iohn. 13. 23 & 20. 2.

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Iesus, Lord, and what shall this man *doe?*

22 Iesus saith vnto him, If I will that he tary till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that Disciple should not die: yet Iesus sayd not vnto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tary till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the Disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimonie is true.

25 *And there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written euery one, I suppose that euen the world it selfe could not conteine the bookes that should be written, Amen. *Chap. 20. 30.

¶ THE

¶ THE
the

CHAP. I.

1 Christ preparing his Apostles to the beholding of his ascension, gathereth them together into the mount Oliuet, commandeth them to expect in Hierusalem the sending downe of the holy Ghost, promiseth after fewe dayes to send it: by vertue whereof they should be witnesses vnto him euen to the vtmost parts of the earth. 9 After his ascension they are warned by two Angels to depart, and to set their mindes vpon his second comming. 12 They accordingly returne, and giuing themselues to prayer, chuse Matthias Apostle inthe place of Iudas.

THe former treatise haue I made, O Theophilus, of al that Iesus began both to doe and teach,

2 Vntill the day in which hee was taken vp, after that he through the holy Ghost had giuen commaundements vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himselfe aliue after his passion, by many infallible proofes, being seene of them fourty dayes, and speaking of the things perteining to the kingdome of God:

‖*Or, eating together with them.*
*Luke 24. 49.

4 And ‖being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, *which, *saith he*, ye haue heard of me.

*Matth. 3. 11.

5 *For Iohn truely baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore againe the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to knowe the times or the sea-

ACTES OF Apostles.

sons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 *But ye shall receiue ||power after that the holy Ghost is come vpon you, and ye shall be witnesses vnto me, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth.

*Chap. 2. 1.

|| *Or, the power of the holy Ghost comming vpon you.*

9 *And when hee had spoken these things, while they beheld, hee was taken vp, and a cloud receiued him out of their sight.

*Luke 24. 51.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as he went vp, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Yee men of Galililee, why stand yee gazing vp into heauen? This same Iesus, which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, in like maner as yee haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount called Oliuet, which is from Hierusalem a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper roome, where abode both Peter & Iames, & Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas *the brother* of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the mids of the disciples, and said, (The number of names together were about an hundred and twentie)

16 Men and brethren, This Scripture must needs haue beene fulfilled, *which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before concerning Iudas, which was guide to them yͭ took Iesus.

*Psal. 41. 9.

17 For hee was numbred with vs, and had obtained part of this ministerie.

*Mat. 27. 7.

18 *Nowthis man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was knowen vnto all the dwellers at Hierusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

*Psal. 69. 26.
*Psal. 109. 7.

20 *For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: *And his ||Bishopricke let another take.

|| *Or, office: or, charge.*

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs all the time that the Lord Iesus went in and out among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto that same day that he was taken vp from vs, must one be ordained to be a witnesse with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Ioseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That hee may take part of this ministerie and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that hee might goe to his owne place.

26 And they gaue foorth their lots, and the lot fell vpon Matthias, and hee was numbred with the eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The Apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking diuers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others. 14 Whom Peter disprouing, and shewing that the Apostles spake by the power of the holy Ghost, that Iesus was risen from the dead, ascended into heauen, had powred downe the same holy Ghost, and was the Messias, a man knowen to them to be approued of God by his miracles, wonders, and signes, and not crucified without his determinate counsell, and foreknowledge: 37 He baptizeth a great number that were conuerted. 41 Who afterwards deuoutly, and charitably conuerse together: the Apostles working many miracles, and God daily increasing his Church.

ANd when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like as of fire, and it sate vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, deuout men, out of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Now †when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were ||confounded, because that euery man heard them speake in his owne language.

† *Gre. when this voice was made.*

7 And they were all amazed, and marueiled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake, Galileans?

|| *Or, troubled in mind.*

8 And how heare we euery man in our owne tongue, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Iudea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, & strangers of Rome, Iewes and Proselites,

11 Cretes, and Arabians, we doe heare them speake in our tongues the wonderfull workes of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing vp with the eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, & all ye that dwell at Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken to my words:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.

16 *But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Ioel,

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes (saith God)
I will powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh: and
your

* Ioel. 2. 28. esai. 44. 3.

your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your yong men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames:

18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaidens, I will powre out in those daies of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I wil shew wonders in heauen aboue, and signes in the earth beneath: blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.

*Ioel 2. 31.

20 *The Sunne shall be turned into darkenesse, and the Moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

*Rom. 10. 13.

21 *And it shall come to passe, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued.

22 Yee men of Israel, heare these words, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approued of God among you, by miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as yee your selues also know:

23 Him, being deliuered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, yee haue taken, and by wicked hands, haue crucified, and slaine:

24 Whom God hath raised vp, hauing loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that hee should be holden of it.

*Psal. 16. 9.

25 For Dauid speaketh concerning him, *I foresaw the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moued.

26 Therefore did my heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad: Moreouer also, my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made knowen to mee the wayes of life, thou shalt make mee full of ioy with thy countenance.

‖ *Or, I may.*
*1. King. 2. 10.

29 Men and brethren, ‖let me freely speake vnto you *of the Patriarch Dauid, that he is both dead & buried, and his sepulchre is with vs vnto this day:

*Psal. 132. 11.

30 Therefore being a Prophet, *and knowing that God had sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loines, according to the flesh, hee would raise vp Christ, to sit on his throne:

*Psal. 16. 11.

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, *that his soule was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and hauing receiued of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauens, but he saith himselfe, *The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, *Psal. 110. 1.

35 Vntill I make thy foes thy footstoole.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Iesus, whom ye haue crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said vnto Peter, and to the rest of the Apostles, Men and brethren, What shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Repent, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Iesus Christ, for the remission of sinnes, and ye shal receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, euen as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did hee testifie and exhort, saying, Saue your selues from this vntoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added *vnto them* about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in praiers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued were together, and had all things common,

45 And solde their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread ||from house to house, did eat their meat with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart, || *Or, at home.*

47 Praising God, and hauing fauour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church dayly such as should be saued.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Peter preaching to the people that came to see a lame man restored to his feete, 12 professeth the cure not to haue beene wrought by his, or Iohns owne power, or holinesse, but by God, and his sonne Iesus, and through faith in his Name: 13 Withall reprehending them for crucifying Iesus. 17 Which because they did it through ignorance, and that thereby were fulfilled Gods determinate counsell, and the Scriptures: 19 He exhorteth them by repentance and faith to seeke remission of their sinnes, and saluation in the same Iesus.

NOwe Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple at the houre of prayer, *beeing* the ninth houre.

2 And a certaine man lame from his mothers womb was caried, whom they laide daily at the gate of the Temple which is called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter & Iohn about to go into the Temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes vpon him, with Iohn, said, Looke on vs.

5 And he gaue heede vnto them, expecting to receiue something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Siluer and gold haue I none, but such as I haue, giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And hee tooke him by the right hand, & lift him vp: aud immediatly his feete and ancle bones receiued strength.

8 And hee leaping vp, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was hee which sate for almes at the beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened vnto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, helde Peter and Iohn, all the people ranne together vnto them in the porch, that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter sawe it, hee answered vnto the people, Yee men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke yee so earnestly on vs, as though by our owne power or holinesse we had

made this man to walke?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his sonne Iesus, whom ye deliuered vp, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when hee was determined to let him goe.

14 *But ye denied the Holy one, and the Iust, and desired a murderer to be granted vnto you, *Matt. 27. 20.

15 And killed ||the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses. || *Or, author.*

16 And his Name through faith in his Name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath giuen him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance yee did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, hee hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent yee therefore, and bee conuerted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shal come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And hee shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must receiue, vntill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 *For Moses truely said vnto the fathers, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you of your brethren, like vnto me; him shall yee heare in all things whatsoeuer he shal say vnto you. *Deut. 18. 15. chap. 7. 37.

23 And it shall come to passe, that euery soule which will not heare that Prophet, shalbe destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea and all the Prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Yee are the children of the Prophets, and of the couenant which God made with our fathers, *saying vnto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kinreds of the earth be blessed. *Gen. 12. 3.

26 Vnto you first, God hauing raised vp his Sonne Iesus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away euery one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers of the Iewes offended with Peters Sermon, 4 (though thousands of the people were conuerted that heard the word) imprison him, and Iohn. 5 After, vpon examination Peter boldly auouching the lame man to be healed by the Name of Iesus, and that by the same Iesus onely we must bee eternally saued, 13 They command him and Iohn to preach no more in that Name, adding also threatning, 23 Whereupon the Church fleeeth to prayer. 31 And God by mouing the place where they were assembled, testified that he heard their prayer: confirming the Church with the gift of the holy Ghost, and with mutuall loue and charitie.

|| *Or, ruler.*

AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priests and the ||captaine of the Temple, and the Sadduces came vpon them,

2 Being grieued that they taught the people, and preached through Iesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold vnto the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morow, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the high Priest, and Caiphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the high Priest, were gathered together at Hierusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the middest, they asked, By what power, or by what name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what meanes he is made whole,

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whome God raised from the dead, euen by him, doeth this man stand here before you, whole.

* Psal. 118. 22. mat. 21. 42.

11 *This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any

other: for there is none other name vnder heauen giuen among men whereby we must be saued.

13 ¶ Now when they sawe the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and perceiued that they were vnlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled, and they tooke knowledge of them, that they had bene with Iesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed, standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the Council, they conferred among themselues,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath bene done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and we cannot denie it.

17 But that it spread no farther among the people, let vs straitly threaten them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them, not to speake at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered, and said vnto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken vnto you more then vnto God, iudge ye.

20 For wee cannot but speake the things which we haue seene and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them goe, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeeres olde, on whome this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And being let goe, they went to their owne company, and reported all that the chiefe Priests and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift vp their voyce to God with one accord, & said, Lord, thou art God which hast made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is,

25 *Who by the mouth of thy seruant Dauid hast saide, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things? *Psal. 2. 1.

26 The Kings of the earth stood vp, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, & against his Christ.

27 For of a trueth against thy holy child Iesus, whom thou hast anointed,

both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For to doe whatsoeuer thy hand and thy counsell determined before to be done.

29 And now Lord, behold their threatnings, and graunt vnto thy seruants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word,

30 By stretching foorth thine hand to heale: and that signes and wonders may be done by the Name of thy holy child Iesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one soule: Neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus, and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: For as many as were possessors of lands, or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were solde,

35 And laide them downe at the Apostles feete: And distribution was made vnto euery man according as hee had neede.

36 And Ioses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The sonne of consolation) a Leuite, and of the Countrey of Cyprus,

37 Hauing land, sold it, and brought the money, & laid it at the Apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

After that Ananias and Sapphira his wife for their hypocrisie at Peters rebuke had fallen downe dead, 12 and that the rest of the Apostles had wrought many miracles, 14 to the increase of the faith: 17 The Apostles are againe imprisoned, 19 But deliuered by an Angel bidding them to preach openly to all: 21 When, after their teaching accordingly in the temple, 29 and before the Councill, 33 they are in danger to be killed, through the aduise of Gamaliel, a great councellour among the Iewes, they be kept aliue, 40 and are but beaten: for which they glorifie God, and cease no day from preaching.

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession,

2 And kept backe *part* of the price, his wife also being priuy *to it*, and brought a certaine part, and layd it at the Apostles feete.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart ||to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keepe backe *part* of the price of the land?

|| *Or, to deceiue.*

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? why hast thou conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost: and great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the yong men arose, wound him vp, and caried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three houres after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered vnto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she saide, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter saide vnto her, How is it that ye haue agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feete of them which haue buried thy husband, are at the doore, and shall cary thee out.

10 Then fell she downe straightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: And the yong men came in, and found her dead, and carying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and vpon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the Apostles, were many signes and wonders wrought among the people. (And they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: But the people magnified them.

14 And beleeuers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Insomuch yͭ they brought foorth the sicke ||into the streetes, and layed

|| *Or, in euery streete.*

them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might ouershadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude *out* of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed euery one.

17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose vp, and al they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadduces) and were filled with ||indignation,

|| *Or, enuie.*

18 And laid their hands on the Apostles, & put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them foorth, and said,

20 Goe, stand and speake in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, & taught: but the high Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to haue them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doores, but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe Priests heard these things, they doubted of them wherunto this would grow.

25 Then came one, and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence: (For they feared the people, lest they should haue bene stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the high Priest asked them,

28 Saying, *Did not wee straitly command you, that you should not teach in this Name? And behold, yee haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood vpon vs.

*Chap. 4. 18.

29 ¶ Then Peter, and the other Apostles answered, and saide, Wee

ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised vp Iesus, whom yee slew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to bee* a Prince and a Sauiour, for to giue repentance to Israel, and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

32 And we are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and tooke counsell to slay them.

34 Then stood there vp one in the Councill, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of Law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a litle space,

35 And said vnto them, Yee men of Israel, take heed to your selues, what ye intend to doe as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp Theudas, boasting himselfe to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundred, ioyned themselues: who was slaine, and all, as many as ||obeied him, were scattered, & brought to nought.

|| *Or, beleeued.*

37 After this man rose vp Iudas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: hee also perished, and all, euen as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say vnto you, refraine from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell or this worke be of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot ouerthrow it, lest haply yee be found euen to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the Councill, reioycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And dayly in the Temple, and in euery house, they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Apostles desirous to haue the poore regarded for their bodily sustenance, as also

carefull themselues to dispense the word of God, the foode of the soule: 3 Appoint the office of Deaconship to seuen chosen men. 5 Of whom, Steuen a man full of faith, & of the holy Ghost, is one. 12 Who is taken of those, whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and after falsely accused of blasphemie against the law and the temple.

AND in those dayes when the number of the Disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples vnto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leaue the word of God, and serue tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisedome, whom we may appoint ouer this businesse.

4 But we will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministerie of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Permenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch.

6 Whom they set before the Apostles: and when they had praied, they layd their hands on them.

7 And the word of God encreased, and the number of the Disciples multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which is called *the Synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Steuen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisedome and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, We haue heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred vp the people, and the Elders, and the Scribes, and

came vpon him, and caught him, and brought him to the Councell,

13 And set vp false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Law.

14 For we haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, & shall change the ||Customes which Moses deliuered vs. || *Or, rites.*

15 And all that sate in the Councell, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had bene the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 Steuen permitted to answere to the accusation of blasphemie, 2 Sheweth that Abraham worshipped God rightly, and how God chose the Fathers 20 before Moses was borne, and before the Tabernacle and Temple were built: 37 that Moses himselfe witnessed of Christ: 44 and that all outward Ceremonies were ordeined according to the heauenly paterne, to last but for a time: 51 reprehending their rebellion, and murthering of Christ, the Iust One, whome the Prophets foretold should come into the world. 54 Whereupon they stone him to death, who commendeth his soule to Iesus, and humbly prayeth for them.

THen said the high Priest, Are these things so?

2 And hee said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken: The God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said vnto him, *Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. *Gen. 12. 1

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he remoued him into this lande wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it, no not *so much as* to set his foote on: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seede should soiourne in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreate them euill foure hundreth yeeres.

7 And the nation to whom they shal bee in bondage, will I iudge, saide

God: And after that shall they come forth, and serue me in
this place.
*Gen. 17. 9 8 *And he gaue him the couenant of Circumcision: *and
*Gen. 21. 3 so *Abraham* begate Isaac, and circumcised him the eight
day: *and Isaac *begate* Iacob, *and Iacob *begate* the twelue
*Gene. 25. 26. Patriarchs.
*Gen. 29. 31. 9 *And the Patriarchs moued with enuie, sold Ioseph into
Egypt: but God was with him,
*Gen. 37. 28. 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, *and gaue
*Gen. 41. 37. him fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao king of
Egypt: and he made him gouernour ouer Egypt and all
his house.

11 Now there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt,
and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no
sustenance.

*Gen. 42. 1 12 *But when Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt,
he sent out our fathers first.

*Gen. 45. 4 13 *And at the second *time* Ioseph was made knowen to
his brethren, and Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto
Pharao.

14 Then sent Ioseph, and called his father Iacob to him,
and all his kinred, threescore and fifteene soules.

*Gen. 46. 5 15 *So Iacob went downe into Egyt, *and died, he and
*Gen. 49. 33. our fathers,

16 And were caried ouer into Sichem, and laid in the
sepulchre that Abraham bought for a summe of money of
the sonnes of Emor *the father* of Sichem.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which
God had sworne to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and euill intreated our fathers, so that they cast out their yong children,
to the end they might not liue.

*Exo. 2. 2. 20 *In which time Moses was borne, and *was ‖exceeding
*Heb. 11. 23. faire, and nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths:

‖ *Or, faire to God.* 21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him
vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the
Egyptians, and was mightie in words and in deeds.

23 And when he was full forty yeres old, it came into his
*Exo. 2. 11. heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

24 *And seeing one of them suffer

wrong, he defended him, and auenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstood, how that God by his hand would deliuer them, but they vnderstood not.

26 *And the next day he shewed himselfe vnto them as *Exo. 2.
they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, 13
Sirs, ye are brethren, Why doe yee wrong one to another?

27 But hee that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a Iudge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.

30 *And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared *Exod. 3.
to him in the wildernes of mount Sina, an Angel of the 2
Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to behold it, the voyce of the Lord came vnto him,

32 *Saying*, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shooes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, & am come downe to deliuer them: And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a Iudge? the same did God send to bee a ruler and a deliuerer, by the handes of the Angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 * He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders *Exod. 7.
and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the red Sea, *and in 9. *Exo. 16.
the wildernesse fortie yeeres. 1

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said vnto the children of
Israel, *A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto *Deut. 18.
you of your brethren, ||like vnto mee: him shall ye heare. 15. || *Or, as my selfe.*

38 *This is he that was in yͤ Church in the wildernesse
with the Angel, which spake to him in the mount Sina, *Exo. 19.
and 3

and with our fathers: who receiued the liuely oracles, to
giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him*
from them, and in their hearts turned backe againe into
Egypt,

*Exod. 32. 40 *Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods to goe before vs.
1. For as for this Moses, which brought vs out of the land of
Egypt, we wote not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered
sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their
owne hands.

42 Then God turned, and gaue them vp to worship the
*Amos 5. hoste of heauen, *as it is written in the booke of the
25. Prophets, O ye house of Israel, haue ye offered to me slaine
beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourty yeeres in the
wildernesse?

43 Yea, ye tooke vp the Tabernacle of Moloch, and the
starre of your God Remphan, figures which ye made, to
worship them: and I will carie you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the Tabernacle of witnesse in the
wildernesse, as hee had appointed, speaking vnto Moses,
*Exod. 25. *that he should make it according to the fashion that he had
40. seene.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with
Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God draue
out before the face of our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid,

46 Who found fauour before God, and desired to find a
Tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

*1. Chro. 17. 12. 47 *But Solomon built him an house.

*Chap. 17. 24. 48 *Howbeit the most high dwelleth not in temples made
with hands, as saith the Prophet,

49 Heauen is my throne, and earth is my footestoole:
What house will ye build me, saith the Lord? Or what is
the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stifnecked and vncircumcised in heart, and eares,
ye doe alwayes resist the holy Ghost? as your fathers did, *so*
doe ye.

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted?
And they haue slaine them which shewed before of the
comming of the Iust one, of

whom ye haue bene now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who haue receiued the Lawe by the disposition of Angels, and haue not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But hee being full of the holy Ghost, looked vp stedfastly into heauen, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens opened, and the Sonne of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their eares, and ran vpon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses layd downe their clothes at a yong mans feete, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, calling *vpon God*, and saying, Lord Iesus receiue my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cried with a loud voice, Lord lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleepe.

CHAP. VIII.

By occasion of the persecution in Hierusalem, the Church being planted in Samaria, 5 By Philip the Deacon who preached, did miraracles, and baptized many, among the rest Simon the sorcerer a great seducer of the people: 14 Peter and Iohn come to confirme, and inlarge the Church: where by prayer, and imposition of hands giuing the holy Ghost, 18 When Simon would haue bought the like power of them, 20 Peter sharpely reprouing his hypocrisie, and couetousnesse, and exhorting him to repentance: together with Iohn preaching the word of the Lord, returne to Hierusalem. 26 But the Angel sendeth Philip to teach, & baptize the Ethiopian Eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad through out the regions of Iudea, and Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 And deuout men carried Steuen *to his buriall*, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, he made hauocke of

the Church, entring into euery house, and hailing men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went euery where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gaue heed vnto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with lowd voyce, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giuing out that himselfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeued Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also: and when hee was baptized, hee continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles which were at Hierusalem, heard that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Who when they were come downe, praied for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet hee was fallen vpon none of them: onely they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)

17 Then layde they their hands on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the Apostles hands, the holy Ghost was giuen, hee offered them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay handes,

hee may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.

23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for mee, that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise, and goe toward the South, vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And hee arose, and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authority vnder Candace queene of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Hierusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his charet, read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit saide vnto Philip, Goe neere, and ioyne thy selfe to this charet.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and said, Vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And hee said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip, that hee would come vp, and sit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture, which hee read, was this, *Hee was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, & like a Lambe dumbe before the shearer, so opened he not his mouth:

*Esay. 53. 7.

33 In his humiliation, his Iudgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? For his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom spea-

keth the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water: and the Eunuch said, See, here is water, what doeth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered, and said, I beleeue that Iesus Christ is the Sonne of God.

38 And he commanded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip, and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: and hee went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing thorow he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is striken downe to the earth, 10 is called to the Apostleship, 18 and is baptized by Ananias. 20 He preacheth Christ boldly. 23 The Iewes lay wait to kil him: 29 So doe the Grecians, but hee escapeth both. 31 The Church hauing rest, Peter healeth Æneas of the palsie, 36 and restoreth Tabitha to life.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings & slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus, to the Synagogues, that if hee found any of this way, whether they were men or women, hee might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 And as he iourneyed he came neere Damascus, and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And he fel to the earth, and heard a voice saying vnto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou haue mee to doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shall

be told thee what thou must doe.

7 And the men which iourneyed with him, stood speechlesse, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eate, nor drinke.

10 ¶ And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I *am here*, Lord.

11 And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the street, which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Iudas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ananias, comming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receiue his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill hee hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem:

14 And here he hath authoritic from the chiefe Priests, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for hee is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things hee must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord (euen Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had bene scales, and he receiued sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when hee had receiued meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway hee preached Christ in the Synagogues, that hee is the Sonne of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and said, Is not this he that de-

stroyed them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent that he might bring them bound vnto the chiefe Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, proouing that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsel to kill him.

*2. Cor. 11 32.

24 *But their laying awaite was knowen of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and let him downe by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe to the disciples, but they were all afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared vnto them how hee had seene the Lord in the way, and that hee had spoken to him, and how hee had preached boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was with them comming in, and going out at Hierusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knewe, they brought him downe to Cesarea, and sent him foorth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest thorowout all Iudea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed thorowout all quarters, he came downe also to the Saints, which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certaine man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 And Peter said vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Ioppa a

certain disciple, named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: This woman was full of good works, and almes deeds, which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that she was sicke, and died: whome when they had washed, they laid her in an vpper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring him that he would not ||delay to come to them.

|| *Or, be grieued.*

39 Then Peter arose and went with them: when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber: And all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while shee was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sate vp.

41 And he gaue her his hand, and lift her vp: and when hee had called the Saints & widowes, presented her aliue.

42 And it was knowen thorowout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he taried many dayes in Ioppa, with one Simon a Tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius a deuout man, 5 being commaunded by an Angel, sendeth for Peter: 11 Who by a vision, 15. 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles. 34 As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius and his companie, 44 The holy Ghost falleth on them, 48 and they are baptized.

THere was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a Centurion of $\overset{e}{y}$ band called the Italian band,

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision euidently, about the ninth houre of the day, an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, hee was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy praiers and thine almes are come vp for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Ioppa, and call for one Simon, whose sirname is Peter.

6 Hee lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose house is by the Sea side; he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his houshold seruants, and a deuout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all these things vnto them, he sent them to Ioppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their iourney, and drew nigh vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixth houre.

10 And he became very hungry, and would haue eaten: But while they made ready, he fell into a traunce,

11 And saw heauen opened, and a certaine vessell descending vnto him, as it had beene a great sheete, knit at the foure corners, and let downe to the earth:

12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the ayre.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Rise, Peter: kill, and eate.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is common or vncleane.

15 And the voice spake vnto him againe the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrise: & the vessel was receiued vp againe into heauen.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, should meane: behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made inquirie for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was sirnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, doubting nothing: for I haue sent them.

21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am hee,

whom ye seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they saide, Cornelius the Centurion, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from God by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: And on the morrowe Peter went away with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accōpanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and neere friends.

25 And as Peter was comming in, Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I my selfe also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, hee went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know how that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to keepe company or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common or vncleane.

29 Therfore came I vnto you without gainesaying, as soone as I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent ye haue sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Foure daies agoe I was fasting vntill this houre, and at the ninth houre I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therfore to Ioppa, and call hither Simon, whose sirname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a Tanner, by the Sea side, who when he cōmeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done, that thou art come. Now therefore are we all heere present before God, to heare all things that are cōmanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, *Of a trueth I perceiue yͭ God is no respecter of persons:

*Deut. 10. 17. rom. 2. 11. 1. pet. 1. 17.

35 But in euery nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent vnto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (he is Lord of all.)

37 That word (I say) you knowe which was published thorowout all Iudea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which hee did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew and hanged on a tree,

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but vnto witnesses, chosen before of God, euen to vs who did eate and drinke with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie that it is he which was ordeined of God to be the Iudge of quicke and dead.

*Ier. 31. 34. mich. 7. 18.

43 *To him giue all the Prophets witnesse, that through his Name whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shall receiue remission of sinnes.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not bee baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as wee?

48 And hee commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarie certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter, being accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The Gospel being spread into Phenice and Cyprus, and Antioch, Barnabas is sent to confirme them. 26 The disciples there are first called Christians. 27 They send reliefe to the brethren in Iudea in time of famine.

AND the Apostles, and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, & didst eate with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order vnto them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certaine vessell descend, as it had beene a great sheete, let downe from heauen by foure corners, and it came euen to me.

6 Vpon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the aire.

7 And I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Arise Petec, slay, and eate.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me againe from heauen, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawen vp againe into heauen.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the spirit bad me goe with them, nothing doubting: Moreouer, these sixe brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed vs how hee had seene an Angell in his house, which stood and said vnto him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose sirname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, wherby thou, and all thy house shal be saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, *as on vs at the beginning. *Chap. 2. 4.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, *Iohn indeede baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost. *Iohn 1. 26.

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them the like gift as hee did vnto vs, who beleeued on the Lord Iesus

Christ: what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

*Chap. 8. 1.

19 ¶ *Now they which were scattered abroad vpon the persecution that arose about Steuen, trauailed as farre as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but vnto the Iewes onely.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake vnto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeued, and turned vnto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem: and they sent foorth Barnabas, that hee should goe as farre as Antioch.

23 Who when hee came, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleaue vnto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added vnto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seeke Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeere they assembled themselues ||with the Church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

|| *Or, in the Church.*

27 ¶ And in these dayes, came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antioch.

28 And there stood vp one of them, named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his abilitie, determined to send reliefe vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the Elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herode persecuteth the Christians, kil-

leth Iames, and imprisoneth Peter; whome an Angel deliuereth vpon the prayers of the Church. 20 In his pride taking to himselfe the honour due to God, he is stricken by an Angel, and dieth miserably. 24 After his death, the word of God prospereth.

NOw about that time, Herode the King ||stretched foorth his hands, to vexe certaine of the Church.

|| Or, began.

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Iewes, hee proceeded further, to take Peter also. (Then were the dayes of vnleauened bread.)

4 And when hee had apprehended him, hee put him in prison, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to keepe him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but prayer was made ||without ceasing of the Church vnto God for him.

|| *Or, instant and earnest prayer was made.*

6 And when Herode would haue brought him foorth, the same night Peter was sleeping betweene two Souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the Keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 And beholde, the Angel of the Lord came vpon him, and a light shined in the prison: and hee smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise vp quickely. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Girde thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales: And so he did. And he sayth vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And hee went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the Angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came vnto the yron gate that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them of his owne accord: and they went out and passed on thorow one streete, and foorthwith the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, hee said, Now I know of a suretie, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath deliuered mee out of the hand of Herode, and from all the expectation of the people of the Iewes.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of Iohn whose sirname was Marke, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a damosell came ||to hearken, named Rhoda.

|| *Or, to aske who was there.*

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladnes, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said vnto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was euen so. Then said they, It it his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened *the doore*, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckening vnto them with the hand, to hold their peace, declared vnto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison: And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now assoone as it was day, there was no smal stirre among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herode had sought for him, and found him not, hee examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And hee went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, & there abode.

20 ¶ And Herode ||was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and hauing made Blastus †the kings chamberlaine their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

|| *Or, bare an hostile mind intending warre.*
† *Gr. that was ouer the kings bed-chamber.*

21 And vpon a set day Herod arayed in royall apparell, sate vpon his throne, and made an Oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, *saying*, It is the voice of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because hee gaue not God the glory, and hee was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grewe, and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their ||ministerie, and tooke with them Iohn, whose syrname was Marke.

|| *Or, charge, chap.* 11. 29, 30.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are chosen to goe to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Iesus is Christ. 42 The Gentiles beleeue: 45 but the Iewes gainesay and blaspheme: 46 whereupon they turne to the Gentiles. 48 As many as were ordained to life, beleeued.

NOwe there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certaine Prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had bene ||brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul.

|| *Or, Herods foster brother.*

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their handes on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their Minister.

6 And when they had gone thorow the Ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, a Iewe, whose name was Bariesus:

7 Which was with the deputie of the countrey Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turne away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is *called* Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischiefe, thou child of the deuil, thou enemie of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, & thou shalt be blind, not seeing the Sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darkenes, and he went about, seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he sawe what was done, beleeued, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and Iohn departing from them, returned to Hierusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckning with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, giue audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people *when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, *and with an high arme brought he them out of it.

18 *And about the time of fourtie yeeres †suffered he their maners in the wildernesse.

19 And when he had destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, *he diuided their land to them by lot:

20 And after that *he gaue vnto them iudges, about the space of foure hundred and fifty yeeres vntill Samuel the Prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a King, *and God gaue vnto them Saul the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, by the space of fourty yeres.

22 And when he had remoued him, *hee raised vp vnto them Dauid to be their king, to whom also he gaue testimonie, and said, *I haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine own heart, which shal fulfill all my wil.

23 *Of this mans seed hath God, according to his promise, raised vnto Israel a Sauiour, Iesus:

24 *When Iohn had first preached before his comming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as Iohn fulfilled his course, he said, *Whom thinke ye that I am? I am not he. But behold, there commeth one after me, whose shooes of his feete I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stocke of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the

*Exod. 1. 1.
*Exod. 13. 14.
*Exod. 13. 16.
‡*Gr.* ἐτροποφόρησεν, *perhaps, for* ἐτροφοφόρησεν, *as a nurse beareth or feedeth her childe, Deut.* 1. 31. 2. *macc.* 7. 27. *according to the Sept. and so Chrysost.*
*Iosh. 14. 1
*Iudg. 3. 9.
*1. Sam. 8. 5.
*1. Sam. 16 13.
*Psal. 89. 21.
*Esai. 11. 1.
*Mat. 3. 1.
*Iohn 1. 20

word of this saluation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, & their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the Prophets which are read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 *And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slaine.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and layd him in a Sepulchre.

30 *But God raised him frō the dead:

31 And he was seene many dayes of them which came vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, who are his witnesses vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their children, in that he hath raised vp Iesus againe, as it is also written in the *second Psalme: Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee.

34 And as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, now no more to returne to corruption, he said on this wise, *I will giue you the sure †mercies of Dauid.

35 Wherfore he saith also in another Psalme, *Thou shalt not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

36 For Dauid after he had serued his ||owne generation by the will of God, *fell on sleepe, and was laide vnto his fathers, and saw corruption:

37 But hee whom God raised againe, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it knowen vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

39 And by him all yͭ beleeue, are iustified from all things, from which ye could not be iustified by the Law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, least that come vpon you which is spoken of *in the Prophets,

41 Behold, yee despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which you shall in no wise beleeue, though a man declare it vnto you.

42 And when the Iewes were gone out of the Synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might

*Mat. 27. 22.

*Mat. 28. 6

*Psal. 2. 7. heb. 1. 5.

*Esai. 55. 3.

†*Gre. τὰ ὅσια, holy or iust things, which word the Sept. both in the place of Esai* 55. 3. *and in many others, vse for that which is in the Hebrew, Mercies.*

*Psal. 16. 11.

|| *Or, after he had in his owne age serued the will of God.*

*1. Kings 2. 10.

*Habac. 1. 5

|| *Or, in the weeke betweene, or in the Sabbath betweene.* be preached to them ||the next Sabbath.

43 Now when the Congregation was broken vp, many of the Iewes, and religious Proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the multitudes, they were filled with enuie, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting, and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first haue bene spoken to you: but seeing yee put it from you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles.

*Esay 49. 6. 47 For so hath the Lord cōmanded vs, *saying*, *I haue set thee to bee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for saluation vnto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined to eternall life, beleeued.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Iewes stirred vp the deuout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

*Matth. 10. 14. 51 *But they shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted from Iconium. 7 At Lystra Paul healeth a creeple, wherupon they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They passe through diuers Churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience. 26 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes, and also of the Greekes, beleeued.

2 But the vnbeleeuing Iewes stir-

red vp the Gentiles, and made their mindes euill affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimonie vnto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was diuided: and part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to vse them despitefully, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region that lyeth round about.

7 And there they preached the Gospell.

8 ¶ And there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, being a creeple from his mothers wombe, who neuer had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a lowd voice, Stand vpright on thy feete; And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas Iupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because hee was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then the priest of Iupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen, and garlands vnto the gates, and would haue done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ranne in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, Why doe yee these things? Wee also are men of like passions with you, and preach vnto you, that ye should turne from these vanities, vnto the liuing God,
*which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things *Gen. 1. 1.
that are therein. psal. 146.

16 *Who in times past, suffred all nations to walke in their 5. reuel. 14.
owne wayes. 7.

17 Neuerthelesse, he left not himselfe without witnesse, in *Psal. 81.
that he did good, and gaue vs raine from heauen, and 13.
fruit-

fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

18 And with these sayings scarse restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Iewes from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, *and hauing stoned Paul, drew him out of the citie, supposing he had beene dead.

*2. Cor. 11. 25.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned againe to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the soules of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, aud that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordeined them Elders in euery Church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they beleeued.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went downe into Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

Great dissention ariseth touching Circumcision. 6 The Apostles consult about it, 22 and send their determination by letters to the Churches. 36 Paul and Barnabas thinking to visit the brethren together, fall at strife, and depart asunder.

AND certaine men which came downe from Iudea, taught the brethren, *and said*, *Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saued.

*Galat. 5. 1.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissention and dispu-

tation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certeine other of them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed thorow Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles: and they caused great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles, and Elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose vp certaine of the sect of the Pharisees which beleeued, saying, that it was needfull to circumcise them, and to cōmand them to keepe the Law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles & Elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had bene much disputing, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, *Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while agoe, God made choise among vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the worde of the Gospel, and beleeue.

*Chap. 10. 20. and 11. 13.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnes, giuing them the holy Ghost, euen as he did vnto vs,

9 *And put no difference between vs & them, purifying their hearts by faith.

*Chap. 10. 43. 1. cor. 1. 2.

10 Now therfore why tempt ye God, *to put a yoke vpon the necke of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to beare?

*Mat. 23. 4.

11 But we beleeue that through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, we shal be saued euen as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gaue audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had helde their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visite the Gentiles to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the Prophets, as it is written,

16 *After this I will returne, and wil build againe the Tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe: and I will build againe the ruines thereof, and I will set it vp:

*Amos 9. 11

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, vpon whom my Name is called, sayth the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Knowen vnto God are all his workes frō the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that wee write vnto them, that they abstaine from pollutions of Idoles, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie them that preach him, being read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath day.

22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: *namely*, Iudas surnamed Barsabas, & Silas, chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this maner, The Apostles and Elders, and brethren, send greeting vnto the brethren, which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words, subuerting your soules, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keepe the Law, to whom we gaue no such commandement:

25 It seemed good vnto vs, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue hazarded their liues for the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 Wee haue sent therefore Iudas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay vpon you no greater burden then these necessarie things;

29 That ye abstaine from meates offered to idoles, and from blood, & from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your selues, yee shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they

reioyced for the ||consolation.

|| Or, exhortation.

32 And Iudas and Silas, being Prophets also themselues, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them:

33 And after they had taried there a space, they were let goe in peace from the breehren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs go againe and visit our brethren, in euery city where we haue preached the word of the Lord, *and see* how they doe.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them; who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 And the contention was so sharpe betweene them, that they departed asunder one from the other: & so Barnabas tooke Marke, & sailed vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went thorow Syria and Cilicia, confirming the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul hauing circumcised Timothy, 7 and being called by the Spirit from one countrey to another, 14 conuerteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of diuination. 19 For which cause he and Silas are whipped and imprisoned. 26 The prison doores are opened. 31 The Iayler is conuerted, 37 and they are deliuered.

THen came he to Derbe, and Lystra: and behold, a certaine disciple was there, *named Timotheus, the son of a certaine woman which was a Iewesse, and beleeued: but his father was a Greeke:

*Rom. 16. 21.

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul haue to go forth with him, and tooke, and circumcised him, because of the Iewes which were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees for to keepe, *that were ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

*Chap. 15. 28.

5 And so were the Churches established in the faith, and increased in number dayly.

6 Now when they had gone thorowout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came downe to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come ouer into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediatly we endeuoured to goe into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called vs for to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Therfore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is ||the chiefe citie of that part of Macedonia, and a Colonie: and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

|| *Or, the first.*

13 And on the Sabboth we went out of the citie by a riuer side, where prayer was wont to be made, & we sate downe, and spake vnto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended vnto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her houshold, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to bee faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained vs.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certaine Damosell possessed with a spirit of ||diuination, met vs: which brought her masters much gaine by soothsaying.

|| *Or, of Python.*

17 The same followed Paul and vs, and cried, saying, These men are the seruants of the most hie God, which shew vnto vs the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but

Paul being grieued, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her Masters saw that the hope of their gaines was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the ||market place, vnto the rulers, || *Or, court.*

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, saying, These men being Iewes, do exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose vp together against them, and the Magistrates rent off their clothes, *and commanded to beate them. *2. Cor. 11 25. 1. thes. 2. 2.

23 And when they had layed many stripes vpon them, they cast them into prison, charging the Iaylour to keepe them safely.

24 Who hauing receiued such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, & made their feet fast in the stockes.

25 ¶ And at midnight, Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doores were opened, and euery ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleepe, and seeing the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing that the prisoners had beene fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme, for we are all heere.

29 Then hee called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they saide, Beleeue on the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thy house.

32 And they spake vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And hee tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed their stripes, and was baptized, hee and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them

into his house, hee set meat before them, and reioyced, beleeuing in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the Magistrates sent the Sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The Magistrates haue sent to let you goe: Now therefore depart, and goe in peace.

37 But Paul said vnto them, They haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, being Romanes, and haue cast vs into prison, and now doe they thrust vs out priuily? Nay verily, but let them come themselues, and fetch vs out.

38 And the Sergeants tolde these words vnto the Magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

*Chap. 16. 14.

40 And they went out of the prison, *and entred into *the house* of Lydia, and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 4 where some beleeue, and others persecute him. 10 Hee is sent to Berea, and preacheth there. 13 Being persecuted at Thessalonica, 15 hee commeth to Athens, and disputeth, and preacheth the liuing God to them vnknowen, 34 whereby many are conuerted vnto Christ.

NOw when they had passed thorow Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of the Scriptures,

3 Opening and alleadging, that Christ must needs haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and that this Iesus whom I preach vnto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeued, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the deuout Greekes a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Iewes which beleeued not, mooued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine lewd fellowes of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and

set all the citie on an vprore, and assaulted the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Iason, and certaine brethren vnto the rulers of the citie, crying, These that haue turned the world vpside downe, are come hither also,

7 Whom Iason hath receiued: and these all doe contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, *one* Iesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken securitie of Iason, and of the other, they let them goe.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediatly sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who comming thither, went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they receiued the word with all readinesse of minde, and searched the Scriptures dayly, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued: also of honourable women which were Greekes, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred vp the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to goe as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him vnto Athens, and receiuing a commaundement vnto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when hee saw the city ||wholy giuen to idolatrie.

|| *Or, full of idoles.*

17 Therefore disputed he in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market dayly with them that met with him.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoikes, encountred him: and some said, What will this ||babbler say? Other some, He seemeth to be a setter foorth of strange gods: because hee preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

|| *Or, base fellow.*

19 And

|| *Or, Mars-hill: It was the highest court in Athens.*

19 And they tooke him, and brought him vnto ||Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things to our eares: we would know therefore what these things meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to heare some new thing.)

|| *Or, court of the Areopagites.*

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of ||Mars-hill, and said, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things yee are too superstitious.

|| *Or, gods that you worship,* 2. *Thess.* 2. 4.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your ||deuotions, I found an Altar with this inscription, *TO THE VNKNOWEN GOD.* Whom therefore yee ignorantly worship, him declare I vnto you.

*Cha. 7. 48.

24 *God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that hee is Lord of heauen and earth, dwelleth not in Temples made with hands:

*Psal. 50. 8.

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands *as though he needed any thing, seeing hee giueth to all, life and breath, and all things,

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if haply they might feele after him and finde him, though he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and mooue, and haue our being, as certaine also of your owne Poets haue said, For we are also his offspring.

*Esai 40. 18

29 Forasmuch then as wee are the offspring of God, *wee ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto golde, or siluer, or stone grauen by arte, and mans deuice.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men euery where to repent:

|| *Or, offered faith.*

31 Because hee hath appointed a day in the which he will iudge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom hee hath ordeined, whereof he ||hath giuen assurance vnto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, Wee will heare thee a-

gaine of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certaine men claue vnto him, and beleeued: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles. 9 The Lord encourageth him in a vision. 12 Hee is accused before Gallio the deputie, but is dismissed. 18 Afterwards passing from citie to citie, he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos, being more perfectly instructed by Aquila and Priscilla, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacie.

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,

2 And found a certaine Iewe named *Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and came vnto them. *Rom. 16. 3

3 And because hee was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tentmakers.)

4 And hee reasoned in the Synagogue euery Sabbath, and perswaded the Iewes, and the Greekes.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Iewes, that Iesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselues, and blasphemed, *he shooke his raiment, and said vnto them, Your blood be vpon your owne heads, I am cleane: from henceforth I will goe vnto the Gentiles. *Mat. 10. 14.

7 ¶ And hee departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, one that worshipped God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 *And Crispus, the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, beleeued, and were baptized. *1. Cor. 1. 14.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speake, and holde not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shal set on thee, to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this city.

† Gr. sate there.

11 And hee †continued there a yeere and sixe monethes, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrary to the Law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O yee Iewes, reason would that I should beare with you.

15 But if it be a question of words, and names, and of your law, looke ye to it: for I wil be no iudge of such matters.

16 And he draue them from the iudgment seate.

17 Then all the Greekes tooke Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the Iudgement seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this taried there yet a good while, and then tooke his leaue of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: hauing shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himselfe entred into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the Iewes.

20 When they desired him to tary longer time with them, hee consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all meanes keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem; but I will returne againe vnto you, *if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus.

*1. Cor. 4. 19. iam. 4. 15.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone vp, and saluted the Church, he went downe to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, hee departed, and went ouer all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

*1. Cor. 1. 12.

24 ¶ *And a certaine Iew, named Apollos, borne at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mightie in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being feruent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing onely the baptisme of Iohn.

26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when hee was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receiue him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had beleeued throgh grace.

28 For hee mightily conuinced the Iewes, and that publikely, shewing by the scriptures, that Iesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost is giuen by Pauls hands. 9 The Iewes blaspheme
his doctrine, which is confirmed by miracles. 13 The Iewish exor-
cists 16 are beaten by the deuill. 19 Coniuring books are burnt.
24 Demetrius, for loue of gaine, raiseth an vprore against Paul,
35 which is appeased by the Towne-clerke.

ANd it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul hauing passed thorow the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus, and finding certaine disciples,

2 He said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since yee beleeued? And they saide vnto him, Wee haue not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what then were ye baptized? And they saide, Vnto Iohns Baptisme.

4 *Then saide Paul, Iohn verely baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleeue on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Iesus. *Mat. 3. 11.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laide his hands vpon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophecied.

7 And all yͤ men were about twelue.

8 And hee went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the Kingdome of God.

9 But when diuers were hardened, and beleeued not, but spake euill of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Greeks.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcistes, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua a Iewe, and chiefe of the Priests, which did so.

15 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Iesus I knowe, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, leapt on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and Greekes also dwelling at Ephesus, and feare fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeued came, and confessed, and shewed their deedes.

19 Many also of them which vsed curious arts, brought their bookes together and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of siluer.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and preuailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when hee had passed thorow Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue bin there, I must also see Rome.

22 So hee sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himselfe stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stirre about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius, a siluer smith, which made siluer shrines for Diana, brought no small gaine vnto the craftsmen:

25 Whom he called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we haue our wealth.

26 Moreouer, ye see & heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they bee no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought: but also that the Temple of the great goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were ful of wrath, & cried out, saying, Great is Diana of yͤ Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was filled with confusion, and hauing caught Gaius and Aristarchus men of Macedonia Pauls companions in trauaile, they rushed with one accord into the Theatre.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certaine of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not aduenture himselfe into the Theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would haue made his defence vnto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Iewe, all with one voyce about the space of two houres cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the towne clarke had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there yͭ knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is †a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the *image* which fell downe from Iupiter?

† *Gre. the temple keeper.*

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of Churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse:

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftesmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man, ||the law is open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

|| *Or, the Court dayes are kept.*

39 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shalbe determined in a ||lawfull assembly.

|| *Or, ordinary.*

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes vprore, there being no cause whereby we may giue an accompt of this concourse.

41 And when hee had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lords Supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus hauing fallen downe dead, 10 is raised to life. 17 At Miletum he calleth the Elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himselfe, 28 committeth Gods flocke to them, 29 warneth them of false teachers, 32 commendeth them to God, 36 prayeth with them, and goeth his way.

AND after the vprore was ceased, Paul called vnto him the disciples, and imbraced them, & departed, for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone ouer those parts, and had giuen them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Iewes layed waite for him, as hee was about to saile into Syria, hee purposed to returne thorow Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and of Asia Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, taried for vs at Troas:

6 And wee sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen daies.

7 And vpon the first day of the weeke, when the disciples came together *to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the mor-

* Chap. 2. 46.

row, and continued his speach vntill midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the vpper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine yong man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe, and as Paul was long preaching, hee sunke downe with sleepe, and fel downe from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him, and embracing him, saide, Trouble not your selues, for his life is in him.

11 When hee therefore was come vp againe, & had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, euen till breake of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the yong man aliue, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And wee went before to ship, and sailed vnto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had hee appointed, minding himselfe to goe afoote.

14 And when he met with vs at Assos, wee tooke him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And wee sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and taried at Trogyllium: and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus hee sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue bene with you at all seasons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all humilitie of minde, and with many teares, and temptations, which befell me by the lying in wait of the Iewes:

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught you publikely, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Iewes and also to the Greekes, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound

in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shal befall me there:

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery city, saying that bonds and afflictions ||abide me.

|| Or, *waite for me.*

24 But none of these things mooue me, neither count I my life deare vnto my self, so that I might finish my course with ioy, & the ministery which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you co record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue not shunned to declare vnto you all the counsell of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore vnto your selues, & to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shal men arise, speaking peruerse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three yeeres, I ceased not to warne euery one night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you vp, and to giue you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, or golde, or apparell.

34 Yea, you your selues know, *that these handes haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

*1. Cor. 4. 12. 1. thess. 2. 9. 2. thes. 3. 8.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring, yee ought to support the weake, and to remember the words of the Lord Iesus, how he said, It is more blessed to giue, then to receiue.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, & prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul will not by any meanes be disswaded from going to Ierusalem. 9 Philips daughters Prophetesses. 17 Paul commeth to Ierusalem: 27 where he is apprehended, & in great danger, 31 but by the chiefe captaine is rescued, and permitted to speake to the people.

AND it came to passe, that after wee were gotten frō them, and had lanched, wee came with a straight course vnto Choos, and the day following vnto Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing ouer vnto Phenicea, wee went abroad, and set foorth.

3 Now when wee had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the shippe was to vnlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, wee taried there seuen dayes: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that hee should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those dayes, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought vs on our way, with wiues and children, till wee were out of the citie: and wee kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leaue one of another, we tooke ship, and they returned home againe.

7 And when wee had finished our course from Tyre, wee came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company, departed, and came vnto Cesarea, and wee entred into the house of Philip the Euangelist (*which was one of the seuen) & abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.

9 And ỹ same man had foure daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee taried there many dayes, there came downe from Iudea a certaine Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and said, Thus sayth the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought

O him

him not to goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What meane ye to weepe and to breake mine heart? for I am ready, not to bee bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 And when he would not bee perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we tooke vp our cariages, & went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also certaine of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whō we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly

18 And the day following Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and all the Elders were present.

19 And when hee had saluted them, hee declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministerie.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, & said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walke after the customes.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee: Wee haue foure men which haue a vow on them,

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, & bee at
*Num. 6. 18. chap. 18. 18. charges with them, that they may *shaue their heads: and
all may know that those things wherof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest orderly, and keepest the Law.

*Chap. 15. 20. 25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeue, *wee haue
written and concluded, that they obserue no such thing, saue onely that they keepe themselues from things offered to idoles, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

29 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day purifying
*Num. 6. 13 himselfe with them, entred into the Temple, *to signifie the
accomplishment of the dayes

of purification, vntill that an offering should be offered for euery one of them:

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia, when they saw him in the Temple, stirred vp all the people, and laide hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this is ẏͤ man that teacheth al men euery where against the people, and the law, and this place: and farther brought Greeks also into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seene before with him in the citie, Trophimus an Ephesian, whome they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.)

30 And all the citie was moued, and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul, and drew him out of the Temple: and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kil him, tidings came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was in an vprore.

32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers, and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they saw the chiefe captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe captain came neere, and tooke him, & commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what hee had done.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certaintie for the tumult, he commanded him to be caried into the castle.

35 And when he came vpon ẏͤ staires, so it was that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to bee led into the castle, hee saide vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who saide, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 *Art not thou that Egyptian which before these daies madest an vprore, and leddest out into the wildernesse foure thousand men that were murtherers?

*Chap. 5. 36.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Iew of Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no meane citie: & I beseech thee suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand vnto the people:

ple: and when there was made a great silence, he spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying.

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth at large, how he was conuerted to the faith, 17 and called to his Apostleship. 22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaime on him. 24 He should haue bene scourged, 25 but clayming the priuilege of a Romane, he escapeth.

MEn, brethren, and fathers, heare ye my defence which I make now vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that hee spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,)

*Chap. 21. 39. 3 *I am verely a man which am a Iew, borne in Tarsus *a citie* in Cilicia, yet brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect maner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

*Chap. 8. 3 4 *And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deliuering into prisons both men and women,

5 As also the high Priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my iourney, & was come nigh vnto Damascus about noone, suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 And I fell vnto the ground, and heard a voice saying vnto mee, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said vnto me, I am Iesus of Nazareth whō thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me saw indeede the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I saide, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord said vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a deuout man according to the law, hauing a good report of al the Iewes which dwelt *there*,

13 Came vnto me, and stood, & said vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight. And the same houre I looked vp vpon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, yͭ thou shouldest know his will, & see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnes vnto al men, of what thou hast seene & heard.

16 And now, why tariest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, euen while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying vnto mee, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in euery synagogue them that beleeued on thee.

20 *And when yͤ blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting vnto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

*Chap. 7. 58.

21 And he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence, vnto the Gentiles.

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, and then lift vp their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should liue.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, & threw dust into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bade that hee should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherfore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and vncondemned?

26 When the Centurion heard that, hee went and told the chiefe captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captaine came; and said vnto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine answered,

With a great summe obteined I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free borne.

|| *Or, tortured him.*

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should haue ||examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, & because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chiefe Priests and all their Councill to appeare, and brought Paul downe, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commandeth them to smite him. 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Iewes laying waite for Paul, 20 is declared vnto the chiefe captaine. 27 He sendeth him to Felix the gouernour.

And Paul earnestly beholding the council, said, Men and brethren, I haue liued in all good conscience before God vntill this day.

2 And the high Priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then saith Paul vnto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to iudge mee after the Law, and commandest mee to be smitten contrary to the Law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Reuilest thou Gods high Priest?

*Exod. 22. 27.

5 Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that hee was the high Prist: For it is written, *Thou shalt not speake euill of the ruler of thy people.

*Phil. 3. 5.
*Chap. 24. 21.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, hee cryed out in the Councill, Men and brethren, *I am a Pharisee, the sonne of a Pharisee: *of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

7 And when hee had so said, there arose a dissension betweene the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was diuided.

*Matt. 22. 23.

8 *For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confesse both.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and stroue, saying, Wee finde

no euill in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chiefe captaine fearing lest Paul should haue bene pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to goe downe, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night folowing, the Lord stood by him, and saide, Bee of good cheere, Paul: for as thou hast testified of mee in Hierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certaine of the Iewes banded together, and bound themselues vnder ||a curse, saying, that they would neither eate nor drinke till they had killed Paul.

|| *Or, with an oath of execration.*

13 And they were more then fourtie which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priests and Elders, and said, Wee haue bound our selues vnder a great curse, that wee will eate nothing vntill wee haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the Councill, signifie to the chiefe captaine that he bring him downe vnto you to morrow, as though yee would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or euer he come neere, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying in wait, hee went and entred into the castle, & told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and said, Bring this yong man vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chiefe captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and praied mee to bring this yong man vnto thee, who hath something to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went with him aside priuately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring downe Paul to morrow into the Council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld vnto them: for there lie in wait for him of them moe then fourtie men, which haue bound themselues with an othe, that they will

neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called vnto him two Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to goe to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearemen two hundred, at the third houre of the night.

24 And prouide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe vnto Felix the gouernour.

25 And hee wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias, vnto the most excellent Gouernour Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Iewes and should haue beene killed of them: Then came I with an armie, and rescued him, hauing vnderstood that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowen the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him foorth into their Council.

29 Whom I perceiued to be accused of questions of their lawe, but to haue nothing laide to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was tolde me, how that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gaue commandement to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commaunded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morow, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and deliuered the Epistle to the gouernour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the gouernour had read *the letter*, he asked of what prouince he was. And when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, said hee, when thine accusers are also come. And hee commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Paul being accused by Tertullus the Oratour,

10 answereth for his life and doctrine. 24 He preacheth Christ to the gouernour and his wife. 26 The gouernour hopeth for a bribe, but in vaine. 27 At last, going out of his office, hee leaueth Paul in prison.

AND after fiue dayes, Ananias the hie Priest descended with the Elders, and with a certaine Oratour named Tertullus, who enformed the gouernour against Paul.

2 And when he was called foorth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enioy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deeds are done vnto this natiō by thy prouidence:

3 Wee accept it alwayes, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not farther tedious vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare vs of thy clemencie a few words.

5 For we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a moouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes.

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the Temple: whom we tooke, and would haue iudged according to our lawe.

7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him away out of our hands:

8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee, by examining of whom thy selfe mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beckened vnto him to speake, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this nation, I do the more cheerefully answere for my selfe:

11 Because that thou mayest vnderstand, that there are yet but twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither raising vp the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie:

13 Neither can they proue the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way which they call

heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, which they themselues also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the iust and vniust.

16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe to haue alwayes a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came to bring almes to my nation, & offrings:

*Chap. 21. 27.

18 *Wherupon certaine Iewes from Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult:

19 Who ought to haue beene here before thee, and obiect, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they haue found any euill doing in mee, while I stood before the Councill,

*Chap. 23. 6.

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, *Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, hauing more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them and said, When Lysias the chiefe captaine shall come downe, I will know the vttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and to let him haue libertie, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come vnto him.

24 And after certaine dayes, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iew, he sent for Paul, and heard him cōcerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousnesse, temperance, and iudgement to come, Felix trembled and answered, Go thy way for this time, when I haue a conuenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should haue bene giuen him of Paul, that hee might loose him: wherefore hee sent for him the oftner, and cōmuned with him.

27 But after two yeeres, Portius Festus came into Felix roome: and Felix willing to shew the Iewes a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

2 The Iewes accuse Paul before Festus. 8 He answereth for himselfe, 11 and appealeth vnto Cesar. 14 Afterwards, Festus openeth his

matter to king Agryppa, 23 and he is brought forth. 25 Festus cleareth him to haue done nothing worthy of death.

NOwe when Festus was come into the prouince, after three dayes he ascended frō Cesarea to Hierusalem.

2 Then the high Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that hee himselfe would depart shortly *thither*.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go downe with *me*, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.

6 And when hee had taried among them ||more then ten dayes, hee went downe vnto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the iudgement seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

|| *Or, as some copies reade, no more then eight or ten dayes.*

7 And when hee was come, the Iewes which came downe from Hierusalem, stood round about, and laide many and grieuous complaints against Paul, which they could not proue,

8 While hee answered for himselfe, Neither against the law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor yet against Cesar, haue I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to doe the Iewes a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seat, where I ought to bee iudged; to the Iewes haue I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or haue committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliuer me vnto them. I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the Councill, answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice, came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.

14 And when they had beene there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls

cause vnto the king, saying, There is a certaine man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom when I was at Hierusalem, the chiefe Priests and the Elders of the Iewes enformed me, desiring to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the maner of the Romanes to deliuer any man to die, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers face to face, and haue licence to answere for himselfe concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay, on the morrow I sate on the iudgement seate, and cōmanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because ||I doubted of such maner of questions, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these matters.

|| *Or, I was doubtfull how to inquire heereof.*

21 But when Paul had appealed to bee reserued vnto the ||hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

|| *Or, iudgement.*

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice, with great pompe, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chiefe captaines, and principall men of the citie; at Festus commaundement Paul was brought foorth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are heere present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue dealt with me, both at Hierusalem, and also heere, crying that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himselfe hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: Wherefore I haue brought him foorth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had,

I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me vnreasonable, to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

2 Paul, in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childhood, 12 and how miraculously he was conuerted, and called to his Apostleship. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad, whereunto he answereth modestly. 28 Agrippa is almost perswaded to be a christian. 31 The whole company pronounce him innocent.

THen Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretched foorth the hand, and answered for himselfe,

2 I thinke my selfe happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answere for my selfe this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes:

3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customes and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beseech thee to heare mee patiently.

4 My maner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I liued a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am iudged for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers:

7 Vnto which promise our twelue tribes instantly seruing God day and night, hope to come: For which hopes sake, King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my selfe, that I ought to doe many things contrary to the name of Iesus of Nazareth:

10 *Which thing I also did in Hierusalem, and many of the Saints did I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie from the chiefe Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue my voyce against them.

*Chap. 8. 3.

11 And I punished them oft in euery Synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them euen vnto strange cities.

*Chap. 9. 2. 12 *Whereupon, as I went to Damascus, with authoritie and commission from the chiefe Priests:

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heauen, aboue the brightnes of the Sunne, shining round about mee, and them which iourneyed with me.

14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking vnto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And hee said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand vpon thy feete, for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witnesse, both of these things which thou hast seene, & of those things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turne them from darknesse to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision:

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and thorowout all the coasts of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turne to God, and do works meete for repentance.

21 For these causes the Iewes caught mee in the Temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Hauing therefore obteined helpe of God, I continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that hee should be the first that should rise from the dead, & should shew light vnto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as hee thus spake for himselfe, Festus saide with a lowd voyce, Paul, thou art beside thy selfe, much learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speake foorth the words of trueth and sobernesse.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake freely: for I am perswaded, that none of these things are hidden from him, for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa saide vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest mee to bee a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not onely thou, but also all that heare mee this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the king rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, & they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue bene set at libertie, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not beleeued. 14 They are tossed to and fro with tempest, 41 and suffer shipwracke, 22 34. 44 yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined, that wee should saile into Italy, they deliuered Paul, & certaine other prisoners, vnto one named Iulius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, wee lanched, meaning to saile by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica, beeing with vs.

3 And the next day wee touched at Sidon: And Iulius courteously entreated Paul, and gaue him libertie to goe vnto his friends to refresh himselfe.

4 And when we had lanched from thence, we sailed vnder Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed ouer the

sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, wee came to Myra a citie of Lysia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy, and he put vs therein.

7 And when wee had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarse were come ouer against Gnidus, the wind not suffering vs, wee sailed vnder ||Creete, ouer against Salmone,

|| *Or, Candy.*

8 And hardly passing it, came vnto a place which is called the Faire hauens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the Fast was now alreadie past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this voyage will be with ||hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading & ship, but also of our liues.

|| *Or, iniurie.*

11 Neuerthelesse, the Centurion beleeued the master and the owner of the shippe, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, the more part aduised to depart thence also, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an hauen of Creete, and lieth toward the Southwest, and Northwest.

13 And when the South wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Creete.

14 But not long after, there ||arose against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon.

|| *Or, beat.*

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not beare vp into the winde, we let her driue.

16 And running vnder a certaine yland, which is called Clauda, wee had much worke to come by the boate:

17 Which when they had taken vp, they vsed helps, vndergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quicke-sands, strake saile, and so were driuen.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest the next day, they lightened the ship:

19 And the third day we cast out with our owne handes the tackling of the shippe.

20 And when neither Sunne nor starres in many dayes appeared, and

no small tempest lay on vs; all hope that wee should be saued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood foorth in the middes of them, and said, Sirs, yee should haue hearkened vnto mee, and not haue loosed from Creete, and to haue gained this harme and losse.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheere: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the shippe.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue,

24 Saying, Feare not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen thee all them that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheere: for I beleeue God, that it shall be euen as it was tolde me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast vpon a certaine Iland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as wee were driuen vp and downe in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neere to some countrey:

28 And sounded, and found it twentie fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found it fifteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should haue fallen vpon rockes, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let downe the boat into the sea, vnder colour as though they would haue cast ancres out of the fore-ship,

31 Paul said to the Centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saued.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was comming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, and continued fasting, hauing taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when hee had thus spoken, hee tooke bread, and

God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good cheere, and they also tooke some meat.

37 And we were in all, in the ship, two hundred, threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discouered a certaine creek, with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

|| *Or, cut the ankers, they left them in the sea, &c.*

40 And when they had ||taken vp the ankers, they committed *themselues* vnto the sea, & loosed the rudder bands, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and made toward shore.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ranne the shippe a ground, and the forepart stucke fast, and remained vnmoueable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsel was to kil the prisoners, lest any of them should swimme out, and escape.

43 But the Centurion, willing to saue Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boords, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Paul, after his shipwracke is kindly entertained of the Barbarians. 5 The viper on his hand hurteth him not. 8 He healeth many diseases in the Iland. 11 They depart towards Rome. 17 Hee declareth to the Iewes the cause of his comming. 14 After his preaching some were perswaded, and some beleeued not. 30 Yet he preacheth there two yeeres.

AND when they were escaped, then they knew that the Iland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one because of the present raine, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of stickes, and layde them on the

fire, there came a Viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, they saide among themselues, No doubt this man is a murtherer, whom though hee hath escaped the Sea, yet Vengeance suffereth not to liue.

5 And hee shooke off the beast into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit, they looked when hee should haue swollen, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harme come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chiefe man of the Iland, whose name was Publius, who receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a bloody-flixe, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and layed his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the Iland, came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured vs with many honours, and when wee departed, they laded vs with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths wee departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the Ile, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse wee taried there three dayes.

13 And from thence wee fet a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the South winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where wee found brethren, and were desired to tary with them seuen dayes: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meet vs as farre as Appii forum, and the three Tauernes: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and tooke courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the Captaine of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together. And when they were

come together, he said vnto them, Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or customes of our fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake against it, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chaine.

21 And they saide vnto him, Wee neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee.

22 But we desire to heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that euery where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Iesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning till euening.

¶ *The end of the*

24 And some beleeued the things which were spoken, and some beleeued not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselues, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet, vnto our fathers,

26 Saying, *Goe vnto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and not perceiue.

*Esai. 6. 9. mat. 13. 14. mar. 4. 12. luke 8. 4. ioh. 12. 40. rom. 11. 8.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and vnderstand with their heart, and should bee conuerted, and I should heale them.

28 Be it knowen therfore vnto you, that the saluation of God is sent vnto the Gentiles, and that they wil heare it.

29 And when hee had saide these words, the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeeres in his owne hired house, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

¶ THE

THE
EPISTLE OF
Apostle to

CHAP. I.

1 Paul commendeth his calling to the Romanes, 9 and his desire to come to them. 16 What his Gospel is, and the righteousnesse which it sheweth. 18 God is angry with all maner of sin. 21 What were the sinnes of the Gentiles.

PAVL a seruant of Iesus Christ, called *to bee* an Apostle, *separated vnto the Gospel of God,

* Acts. 13. 1.

2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures,)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of Dauid according to the flesh,

4 And †declared to be the Sonne of God, with power, according to the Spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead.

† *Gr. determined.*

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apostleship ||for obedience to the faith among all nations for his Name,

|| *Or, to the obedience of faith.*

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloued of God, *called to be* Saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serue ||with my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne, that without ceasing I make mention of you, alwayes in my prayers,

|| *Or, in my spirit.*

10 Making request, (if by any meanes

PAVL THE

the Romanes.

now at length I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will
of God) to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart vnto you some
spirituall gift, to the end you may be established,

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ||with you, || *Or, in*
by the mutual faith both of you and me. *you.*

13 Now I would not haue you ignorant, brethren, that
oftentimes I purposed to come vnto you, (but was let hitherto) that I might haue some fruit ||among you also, euen as || *Or, in*
among other Gentiles. *you.*

14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians,
both to the wise, and to the vnwise.

15 So, as much as in mee is, I am ready to preach the
Gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gopel of Christ: for it is
the power of God vnto saluation, to euery one that beleeueth,
to the Iew first, and also to the Greeke.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God reueiled from
faith to faith: as it is written, *The iust shall liue by faith. * Abac. 2.

18 For the wrath of God is reueiled from heauen against 4.
all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of men, who hold the
trueth in vnrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may bee knowen of God, is manifest in ||them, for God hath shewed it vnto them. || *Or, to*

20 For the inuisible things of him from the Creation of the *them.*
world, are clearely seene, being vnderstood by the things
that are made, *euen* his eternall Power and Godhead, ||so that || *Or, that*
they are without excuse: *they may*

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him *be.*
not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine
in

in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened:

22 Professing themselues to be wise, they became fooles:

*Psal. 106. 20.

23 And changed the glory of the vncorruptible *God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birdes, and foure footed beasts, and creeping things:

24 Wherefore God also gaue them vp to vncleannesse, through the lusts of their owne hearts, to dishonour their owne bodies betweene themselues:

25 Who changed the trueth of God into a lye, and worshipped and serued the creature more then the Creatour, who is blessed for euer. Amen.

26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature:

27 And likewise also the men, leauing the naturall vse of the woman, burned in their lust one towards another, men with men working that which is vnseemely, and receiuing in themselues that recompense of their errour which was meet.

|| *Or, to acknowledge.*
|| *Or, a minde voyde of iudgement.*

28 And euen as they did not like to ||retaine God in *their* knowledge, God gaue them ouer to ||a reprobate minde, to doe those things which are not conuenient:

29 Being filled with all vnrighteousnes, fornication, wickednesse, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuie, murther, debate, deceit, malignitie, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despitefull, proude, boasters, inuenters of euill things, disobedient to parents;

|| *Or, vnsociable.*

31 Without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without ||naturall affection, implacable, vnmercifull;

|| *Or, consent with them.*

32 Who knowing the iudgement of God, (that they which commit such things, are worthy of death) not onely do the same, but ||haue pleasure in them that doe them.

CHAP. II.

1 They that sinne, though they condemne it in others, cannot excuse themselues, 6 and much lesse escape the iudgement of God, 9 whether they be Iewes or Gentiles. 14 The Gentiles cannot escape, 17 nor yet the Iewes, 25 whom their Circumcision shall not profit, if they keepe not the Law.

THerefore, thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that iudgest: for wherein thou iudgest another, thou condemnest thy selfe, for thou that iudgest doest the same things.

2 But wee are sure that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that iudgest them which doe such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that the goodnes of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnesse, and impenitent heart, *treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath, and reuelation of the righteous iudgement of God: *Iames 5. 3.

6 *Who will render to euery man according to his deedes: *Psal. 62. 12. matth. 16. 27. reuel. 22. 12.

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well doing, seeke for glorie, and honour, and immortalitie, eternall life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious, & doe not obey the trueth, but obey vnrighteousnes, indignation, & wrath,

9 Tribulation, and anguish vpon euery soule of man that doeth euill, of the Iew first, and also of the †Gentile. †*Gr. Greeke*

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to euery man that worketh good, to the Iew first, and also to the †Gentile. †*Gr. Greeke*

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without Law, shall also perish without Law: and as many as haue sinned in the Law, shalbe iudged by the Law.

13 (For not the hearers of the Law are iust before God, but the doers of the Law shalbe iustified;

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, doe by nature the things contained in the Law: these hauing not the Law, are a Law vnto themselues,

15 Which shew the worke of the Law written in their hearts, their ||conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts ||the meane while accusing, or else excusing one another: ||*Or, the conscience witnessing with them.* ||*Or, betweene themselues.*

16 In the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

P 17 Be-

17 Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Law, and makest thy boast of God:

|| *Or, triest the things that differ.*

18 And knowest *his* will, and ||approuest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the Law,

19 And are confident that thou thy selfe art a guide of the blinde, a light of them *which are* in darkenesse:

20 An instructour of the foolish, a teacher of babes: which hast the forme of knowledge and of the trueth in the Law:

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest a man should not steale, doest thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adulterie, doest thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorrest idols, doest thou commit sacriledge?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, through breaking the Law dishonourest thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is *written:

*Esay 52. 5. ezech. 36. 20, 23.

25 For Circumcision verily profiteth if thou keepe the Law: but if thou be a breaker of the Law, thy Circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore, if the vncircumcision keepe the righteousnesse of the Law, shall not his vncircumcision be counted for Circumcision?

27 And shall not vncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the Law, iudge thee, who by the letter, and Circumcision, doest transgresse the Law?

28 For hee is not a Iew, which is one outwardly, neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Iew which is one inwardly, and Circumcision is, that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Iewes prerogatiue: 3 which they haue not lost: 9 Howbeit the Law conuinceth them also of sinne: 20 Therefore no flesh is iustified by the Law, 28 but all, without difference, by faith onely: 31 And yet the Law is not abolished.

WHat aduantage then hath the Iew? or what profit is there of Circumcision?

2 Much euery way: chiefly, because that vnto

them were committed the Oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeue? shall their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but euery man a lier, as it is written, *That thou mightest be iustified in thy sayings, and mightest ouercome when thou art iudged. *Psal. 51. 4.

5 But if our vnrighteousnesse commend the righteousnesse of God, what shall we say? is God vnrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speake as a man)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God iudge the world?

7 For if the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lye vnto his glory; why yet am I also iudged as a sinner?

8 And not *rather* as wee be slanderously reported, and as some affirme that we say, Let vs doe euill, that good may come: whose damnation is iust.

9 What then? are wee better *then they?* No in no wise: for we haue before †proued both Iewes, and Gentiles, that they are all vnder sinne, †*Gr. charged.*

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one:

11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become vnprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they haue vsed deceit, the poyson of Aspes is vnder their lippes:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse:

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction & misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace haue they not knowen.

18 There is no feare of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soeuer the Law saith, it saith to them who are vnder the Law: that euery mouth may bee stopped, and all the world may become ||guilty before God. ||*Or, subiect to the iudgement of God.*

20 Therefore by the deedes of the Law, there shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the Law *is* the knowledge of sinne.

21 But nowe the righteousnesse of God without the Lawe is manifested, being witnessed by the Lawe and the Prophets.

22 Euen the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Iesus Christ vnto all, and vpon all them that beleeue: for there is no difference:

23 For all haue sinned, and come short of the glory of God,

24 Being iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Iesus Christ:

|| *Or, foreordeined.*
|| *Or, passing ouer.*

25 Whom God hath ||set forth to bee a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the ||remission of sinnes, that are past, through the forbearance of God.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that hee might bee iust, and the iustifier of him which beleeueth in Iesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what Law? Of works? Nay: but by the Law of faith.

28 Therefore wee conclude, that a man is iustified by faith, without the deeds of the Law.

29 Is he the God of the Iewes only? Is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God which shal iustifie the circumcision by faith, and vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe we then make void the lawe through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Law.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousnesse, 10 before hee was circumcised. 13 By faith only he and his seed receiued the promise. 16 Abraham is the father of all that beleeue. 24 Our faith also shall be imputed to vs for righteousnes.

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as perteining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, hee hath *whereof* to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted vnto him for righteousnes.

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth on him that iustifieth the vngodly; his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Euen as Dauid also describeth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without works:

7 *Saying*, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sinnes are couered.

8 Blessed is the man to whome the Lord will not impute sinne.

9 *Commeth* this blessednes then vpon the circumcision *onely*, or vpon the vncircumcision also? for wee say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in vncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in vncircumcision.

11 And hee receiued the signe of circumcision, a seale of the righteousnesse of the faith, which *hee had yet* being vncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that beleeue, though they be not circumcised; that righteousnesse might be imputed vnto them also:

12 And the father of circumcision, to them who are not of the circumcision onely, but also walke in the steppes of that faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* being yet vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heire of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed through the Lawe, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heires, faith is made voide, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no Lawe is, *there* is no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* of faith, that it might bee by grace; to the ende the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, *I haue made thee a father of many nations) ||before him whom he beleeued, *euen* God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which bee not, as though they were,

*Gen. 17. 5

|| *Or, like vnto him.*

18 Who against hope, beleeued in hope, that hee might become the father of many nations: according to that

*Gen. 15. 5. which was spoken, *So shall thy seede bee.

19 And being not weake in faith, hee considered not his owne body now dead, when hee was about an hundred yere old, neither yet the deadnes of Saraes wombe.

20 Hee staggered not at the promise of God through vnbeliefe: but was strong in faith, giuing glory to God:

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to performe.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:

24 But for vs also, to whome it shall bee imputed, if wee beleeue on him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead,

25 Who was deliuered for our offences, and was raised againe for our iustification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being iustified by faith, wee haue peace with God, 2 and ioy in our hope, 8 that sith we were reconciled by his blood, when wee were enemies, 10 wee shall much more be saued being reconciled. 12 As sinne and death came by Adam, 17 so much more righteousnesse and life by Iesus Christ. 20 Where sinne abounded, grace did superabound.

THerefore being iustified by faith, wee haue peace with God, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

2 By whom also wee haue accesse by faith, into this grace wherein wee stand, and reioyce in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not onely *so*, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:

4 And patience, experience: and experience, hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs.

|| *Or, according to the time.*

6 For when wee were yet without strength, ||in due time, Christ died for the vngodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peraduenture for a good man, some would euen dare to dye.

8 But God commendeth his loue towards vs, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.

9 Much more then being now iustified by his blood, we shalbe saued from wrath through him.

10 For if when wee were enemies, we were reconciled to God, by the death of his sonne: much more being reconciled, we shalbe saued by his life.

11 And not onely so, but wee also ioy in God, through our Lorde Iesus Christ, by whom we haue now receiued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sin: and so death passed vpon all men, ||for that all haue sinned.

|| *Or, in whom*

13 For vntill the Law sinne was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no Law.

14 Neuertheles, death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come:

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift: for if through the offence of one, many bee dead: much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, *which is* by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 And not as *it was* by one that sinned, *so is* the gift: for the iudgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences vnto iustification.

17 For if ||by one mans offence, death raigned by one, much more they which receiue abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousnes, shall reigne in life by one, Iesus Christ.

|| *Or, by one offence.*

18 Therfore as ||by the offence of one, *iudgment* came vpon all men to condemnation: euen so by the ||righteousnes of one, *the free gift* came vpon all men vnto iustification of life.

|| *Or, by one offence.*

|| *Or, by one righteousnes*

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by the obedience of one, shall many bee made righteous.

20 Moreouer, the Lawe entred, that the offence might abound: but where sinne abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as sinne hath reigned vnto death; euen so might grace reigne thorow righteousnes vnto eternall life, by Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 Wee may not liue in sinne, 2 for wee are dead vnto it, 3 as appeareth by our baptisme. 12 Let not sinne raigne any more, 18 because wee haue yeelded our selues to the seruice of righteousnesse, 23 and for that death is the wages of sinne.

WHat shall we say then? shall wee continue in sinne: that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how shall wee that are dead to sinne, liue any longer therein?

|| *Or, are.*

3 Know ye not, that so many of vs as ||were baptized into Iesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore wee are buryed with him by baptisme into death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead by the glorie of the Father: euen so wee also should walke in newnesse of life.

5 For if we haue bene planted together in the likenesse of his death: wee shalbe also in the likenesse of his resurrection:

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the bodie of sinne might bee destroyed, that hencefoorth we should not serue sinne.

† *Gr. iustified*

7 For he that is dead, is †freed from sinne.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleeue that we shal also liue with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being raysed from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion ouer him.

10 For in that he dyed, he dyed vnto sinne once: but in that hee liueth, hee liueth vnto God.

11 Likewise reckon yee also your selues to be dead indeed vnto sinne: but aliue vnto God, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therfore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

† *Gr. armes, or weapons.*

13 Neither yeeld yee your members as †instruments of vnrighteousnes vnto sinne: but yeelde your selues vnto God, as those that are aliue from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousnesse vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you, for yee are not vnder the Law, but vnder Grace.

15 What then? shal we sinne, because wee are not vnder the Law, but vnder Grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom yee yeeld your selues seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom ye obey: whether of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnesse?

17 But God bee thanked, that yee were the seruants of sinne: but ye haue obeyed from the heart that fourme of doctrine, †which was deliuered you.

† *Gr. whereto ye were deliuered.*

18 Being then made free from sinne, yee became the seruants of righteousnesse.

19 I speake after the maner of men, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as yee haue yeelded your members seruants to vncleannesse and to iniquitie, vnto iniquitie: euen so now yeelde your members seruants to righteousnesse, vnto holinesse.

20 For when yee were the seruants of sinne ye were free †from righteousnesse.

† *Gr. to righteousnesse.*

21 What fruit had yee then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sinne, and become seruants to God, yee haue your fruit vnto holinesse, and the end euerlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 No law hath power ouer a man, longer then hee liueth. 4 But wee are dead to the law. 7 Yet is not the law sinne, 12 but holy, iust, good, 16 as I acknowledge, who am grieued because I cannot keepe it.

KNow ye not, brethren (for I speake to them that knowe the Lawe) how that the Lawe hath dominion ouer a man, as long as he liueth?

2 For the woman which hath an husbaud, is bound by the law to her husband, so long as he liueth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of the husband.

3 So then if while her husband liueth, shee be married to another man, shee shalbe called an adulteresse: but if her husband be dead, shee is free from that law, so that she is no adulteresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, yee also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, euen to him who is raised from the dead, that wee should bring forth fruit vnto God,

† *Gr. passions*

5 For when wee were in the flesh, the †motions of sinnes which were by the law, did worke in our members, to bring foorth fruit vnto death.

‖ *Or, being dead to that.*

6 But now wee are deliuered from the law, ‖that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serue in newnesse of spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

‖ *Or, concupiscence.*

7 What shall wee say then? is the law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I had not knowen sinne, but by the lawe: for I had not knowen ‖lust, except the Law had said, Thou shalt not couet.

8 But sinne taking occasion by the commaundement, wrought in me all maner of concupiscence. For without the Law sinne *was* dead.

9 For I was aliue without the Law once, but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued, and I died.

10 And the commandement which was *ordained* to life, I found to be vnto death.

11 For sinne taking occasion by the commandement, deceiued me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the Law is holy, and the Commandement holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto me? God forbid. But sinne, that it might appeare sinne, working death in mee by that which is good: that sinne by the Commaundement might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For wee know that the Law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold vnder sinne.

† *Gr. know.*

15 For that which I do, I †allow not: for what I would, that do I not, but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If then I doe that which I would not, I consent vnto the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that doe it: but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to will is present with me: but *how* to performe that which is good, I find not.

19 For the good that I would, I do

not: but the euill which I would not, that I doe.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a Law, that when I would do good, euil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the Lawe of God, after the inward man.

23 But I see another Lawe in my members, warring against the Lawe of my minde, and bringing me into captiuity to the Law of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am: who shall deliuer me from ‖the body of this death?

‖ *Or, this body of death.*

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the mind I my self serue the Law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 They that are in Christ, and liue according to the Spirit, are free from condemnation. 5. 13 What harme commeth of the flesh, 6. 14 and what good of the Spirit: 17 and what of being Gods childe, 19 whose glorious deliuerance all things long for, 29 was before hand decreed from God. 38 What can seuer vs from his loue?

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

2 For the law of the spirit of life, in Christ Iesus, hath made me free from the law of sinne and death.

3 For what the law could not doe, in that it was weake through the flesh, God sending his owne Sonne, in the likenesse of sinnefull flesh, and ‖for sinne condemned sinne in the flesh:

‖ *Or, by a sacrifice for sin.*

4 That the righteousnesse of the law might be fulfilled in vs, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, doe minde the things of the flesh: but they that are after the spirit, the things of the spirit.

6 For to †be carnally minded, is death: but †to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:

7 Because †the carnall minde is enmitie against God: for itis not subiect to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

† *Gr. the minding of the flesh.*
† *Gr. the minding of the spirit.*
† *Gr. the minding of the flesh.*

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man haue not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sinne: but the spirit is life, because of righteousnesse.

11 But if the spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, ‖by his spirit that dwelleth in you.

‖ *Or, because of his spirit.*

12 Therfore brethren, we are detters, not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh.

13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the spirit doe mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall liue.

14 For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receiued the spirit of bondage againe to feare: but ye haue receiued the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, father.

16 The spirit it selfe beareth witnes with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires, heires of God, and ioynt heires with Christ: if so be that we suffer with *him*, that wee may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be reuealed in vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature, waiteth for the manifestation of the sonnes of God.

20 For the creature was made subiect to vanitie, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subiected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it selfe also shall bee deliuered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious libertie of the children of God.

22 For wee know that ‖the whole creation groaneth, and trauaileth in paine together vntill now.

‖ *Or, euery creature.*

23 And not only *they*, but our selues also which haue the first fruites of the spirit, euen we our selues groane within our selues, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the *redemption of our body.

*Luke 21. 28.

24 For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

25 But if wee hope for that wee see not, then doe wee with patience waite for it.

26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what wee should pray for as wee ought: but the spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs with groanings, which cannot bee vttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of the spirit, ||because he maketh intercession for the Saints, according to *the will of* God. || *Or, that*

28 And wee know that all things worke together for good, to them that loue God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his sonne, that hee might bee the first borne amongst many brethren.

30 Moreouer, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also iustified: and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall wee then say to these things? If God be for vs, who can bee against vs?

32 He that spared not his owne son, but deliuered him vp for vs all: how shall hee not with him also freely giue vs all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that iustifieth:

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen againe, who is euen at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? *shall* tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword?

36 (As it is written, *for thy sake we are killed all the day long, wee are accounted as sheepe for the slaughter.) *Psal. 44. 22.

37 Nay in all these things wee are more then conquerours, through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shalbe able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 Paul is sory for the Iewes. 7 All the seed of

Abraham were not the children of the promise. 18 God hath mercy vpon whom hee will. 21 The potter may doe with his clay what he list. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and reiecting of the Iewes were foretold. 32 The cause why so few Iewes embraced the righteousnesse of faith.

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing mee witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorrow in my heart.

|| *Or, separated.*

3 For I could wish that my selfe were ||accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsemen according to the flesh:

|| *Or, testaments.*

4 Who are Israelites: to whom perteineth the adoption, and the glory, and the ||couenants, and the giuing of the Law, and the seruice *of God*, and the promises:

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is ouer all, God blessed for euer, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel which are of Israel:

*Gen. 21. 12.

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham are *they* all children: but *in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

*Gen. 18. 10.

9 For this is the word of promise, *At this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

10 And not onely *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceiued by one, *euen* by our father Isaac,

11 (For the *children* being not yet borne, neither hauing done any good or euil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of workes, but of him that calleth.)

*Gene. 25. 23.
|| *Or, greater.*
|| *Or, lesser.*
*Mala. 1. 2.

12 It was said vnto her, The *||elder shall serue the ||yonger.

13 As it is written, *Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated.

14 What shall we say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.

*Exod. 33. 19.

15 For hee saith to Moses, *I will haue mercy on whom I wil haue mercie, and I will haue compassion on whom I will haue compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that wil-

leth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, *Euen for this same purpose haue I raised thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might bee declared throughout all the earth.

*Exod 9. 16.

18 Therefore hath hee mercie on whom hee will haue mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto mee; Why doeth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that ||repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, *Why hast thou made me thus?

|| *Or, answerest againe, or disputest with God?*

21 Hath not the *potter power ouer the clay, of the same lumpe, to make one vessell vnto honour, and another vnto dishonour?

*Esay 45. 9.
*Iere. 18. 6. wisd. 15. 7.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, & to make his power knowen, indured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath ||fitted to destruction:

|| *Or, made vp.*

23 And that he might make knowen the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which hee had afore prepared vnto glorie?

24 Euen vs whom hee hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, *I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her, beloued, which was not beloued.

*Ose. 2. 23. 1. pet. 2. 10.

26 *And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was saide vnto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they bee called the children of the liuing God.

*Ose. 1. 10.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, *Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shalbe saued.

*Esay 10. 22, 23.

28 For he will finish the ||worke, and cut it short in righteousnesse: because a short ||worke will the Lord make vpon the earth.

|| *Or, the account.*

29 And as Esaias said before, *Except the Lord of Sabboth had left vs a seed, we had bene as Sodoma, and bene made like vnto Gomorrha.

*Esay 1. 9.

30 What shall wee say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousnesse, haue attained to righteousnesse, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith:

31 But Israel which followed after the Law of righteousnesse, hath not attained to the Law of righteousnes.

32 Wherefore? because *they sought it*, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the Law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, *Beholde, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rocke of offence: and whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be ||ashamed.

*Esay 8. 14 and 28. 16. 1. pet. 2. 6.
|| *Or, confounded.*

CHAP. X.

5 The Scripture sheweth the difference betwixt the righteousnes of the Law, and this of faith, 11 and that all both Iew and Gentile that beleeue, shal not be cõfounded, 18 and that the Gentiles shall receiue the word and beleeue. 19 Israel was not ignorant of these things.

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saued.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue a zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their owne righteousnesse, haue not submitted themselues vnto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousnes to euery one that beleeueth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is of the Law, that *the man which doeth those things shall liue by them.

*Leu. 18. 5 ezek. 20. 11 gal. 3. 12.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise: *Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? That is to bring Christ down from aboue.

*Deut. 30. 12.

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deepe? That is to bring vp Christ againe from the dead.

8 But what saith it? *The word is nigh thee, *euen* in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that is the word of faith which we preach,

*Deut. 30. 14.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saued.

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made vnto saluation.

11 For the Scripture saith, *Whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not bee ashamed. *Esa. 28. 16

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iew and the Greeke: for the same Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that call vpon him.

13 *For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord, shall be saued. *Ioel 2. 32. acts 2. 21.

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they haue not beleeued? and how shal they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a Preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written: *How beautifull are the feete of them that preach the *Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! *Esa. 52. 7. naum. 1. 15

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel. For Esaias saith, *Lord, who hath beleeued our ||†report? *Esa. 53. 1. iohn 12. 38 || *Or, preaching.* †*Gr. the hearing of vs.*

17 So then, faith *commeth* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, haue they not heard? yes verely, *their sound went into all the earth, and their words vnto the ends of the world. *Psal. 19. 4.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, *I will prouoke you to iealousie by them that are no people, & by a foolish nation I will anger you. *Deut. 32. 21.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, *I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest vnto them, that asked not after me. *Esa. 65. 1.

21 But to Israel he sayth, *All day long I haue stretched foorth my hands vnto a disobedient and gainesaying people. *Esa. 65. 2.

CHAP. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected, though the rest were hardened. 16 There is hope of their conuersion. 18 The Gentiles may not insult vpon them: 26 For there is a promise of their saluation. 33 Gods iudgements are vnsearchable.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbidde. For I also am an Israelite of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which hee foreknew. Wote yee not what the Scripture saieth of Elias? how hee maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 *Lord,

*1. Reg. 19. 14.

3 *Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine Altars, and I am left alone, and they seeke my life.

*1. Reg. 19. 18.

4 But what saieth the answere of God vnto him? *I haue reserued to my selfe seuen thousand men, who haue not bowed the knee to *the image of* Baal.

5 Euen so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of workes: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it bee of workes, then is it no more grace, otherwise worke is no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ||blinded,

|| *Or, hardened.*

*Esa. 29. 10

|| *Or, remorse*

*Esa. 6. 9.

8 According as it is written, *God hath giuen them the spirit of ||slumber: *eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

*Psa. 69. 22

9 And Dauid sayth, *Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling blocke, and a recompense vnto them.

*Psa. 69. 23

10 *Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow downe their backe alway.

11 I say then; Haue they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid. But *rather* through their fall, saluation *is come* vnto the Gentiles, for to prouoke them to ielousie.

|| *Or, decay, or losse.*

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the ||diminishing of them, the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may prouoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shal the receiuing *of them* be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruite bee holy, the lumpe is also *holy:* and if the root be holy, so *are* the branches.

|| *Or, for them.*

17 And if some of the branches bee broken off, and thou being a wilde oliue tree wert graffed in ||amongst them, and with them partakest of the roote and fatnesse of the Oliue tree:

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might bee graffed in.

20 Well: because of vnbeliefe they were broken off, and thou standest by fayth. Be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heede* least hee also spare not thee.

22 Beholde therefore the goodnesse and seueritie of God: on them which fell, seueritie; but towards thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in vnbeliefe, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the Oliue tree which is wilde by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good Oliue tree: how much more shall these which be the naturall *branches*, bee graffed into their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should bee ignorant of this mysterie (least yee should bee wise in your owne conceits) that ||blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, vntill the fulnes of the Gentiles be come in.

|| *Or, hardnesse.*

26 And so all Israel shall be saued, as it is written, *There shall come out of Sion the Deliuerer, and shall turne away vngodlinesse from Iacob.

*Esa. 59. 20

27 For this is my couenant vnto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers *sakes*.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For as yee in times past haue not ||beleeued God, yet haue now obtained mercy through their vnbeliefe:

|| *Or, obeyed.*

31 Euen so haue these also now not ||beleeued, that through your mercy they also may obtaine mercy.

|| *Or, obeyed.*

32 For God hath ||concluded them all in vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercy vpon all.

|| *Or, shut them all vp together.*

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisedome and knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 *For who hath knowen the mind
of

*Esa. 40. 13
wisd. 9. 13.
1. cor. 2. 16.

of the Lord, or who hath bene his counseller?

35 Or who hath first giuen to him, and it shall bee recompensed vnto him againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for euer. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercies must mooue vs to please God. 3 No man must thinke too well of himselfe, 6 But attend euerie one, on that calling, wherein he is placed. 9 Loue, and many other dueties are required of vs. 19 Reuenge is specially forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that yee present your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which is* your reasonable seruice.

2 And bee not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renuing of your minde, that ye may proue what is that good, that acceptable and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace giuen vnto mee, to euery man that is among you, not to thinke of himselfe more highly then hee ought to thinke, but to thinke †soberly, according as God hath dealt to euery man the measure of faith.

† *Gr. to sobrietie.*

4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all members haue not the same office:

5 So we being many are one bodie in Christ, and euery one members one of another.

6 Hauing then gifts, differing according to the grace that is giuen to vs, whether prophecie, let vs prophecie according to the proportion of faith.

7 Or ministery, *let vs wait*, on our ministring: or hee that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that ||giueth, *let him doe it* ||with simplicitie: hee that ruleth, with diligence: hee that sheweth mercy, with cheerefulnesse.

|| *Or, imparteth.*
|| *Or, liberally.*

9 Let loue bee without dissimulation: abhorre that which is euill, cleaue to that which is good.

10 Bee kindly affectioned one to another ||with brotherly loue, in honour preferring one another.

|| *Or, in the loue of the brethren.*

11 Not slouthfull in busines: feruent

in spirit, seruing the Lord.

12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Distributing to the necessitie of Saints; giuen to hospitalitie.

14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse, and curse not.

15 Reioyce with them that doe reioice, and weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of the same mind one towards another. Minde not high things, but ||condescend to men of low estate. Bee not wise in your owne conceits.

|| *Or, be contented with meane things.*

17 Recompence to no man euill for euill. Prouide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lyeth in you, liue peaceably with all men.

19 Dearely beloued, auenge not your selues, but rather giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, *Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.

*Deut. 32. 35.

20 *Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feed him: if he thirst, giue him drink. For in so doing thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head.

*Pro. 25. 21

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Subiection, and many other dueties wee owe to the Magistrates. 8 Loue is the fulfilling of the Law. 11 Gluttonie and drunkennes, and the workes of darkenesse, are out of season in the time of the Gospel.

LEt euery soule bee subiect vnto the higher powers: For there is no power but of God. The powers that be, are ||ordeined of God.

|| *Or, ordered.*

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the euill. Wilt thou then not bee afraide of the power? doe that which is good, and thou shalt haue praise of the same.

4 For hee is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou do that which is euill, be afraid: for he beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the minister of God, a reuenger *to execute* wrath vpon him that doeth euill.

5 Wherfore ye must needs be subiect, not onely for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute

also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually vpon this very thing.

7 Render therfore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute *is due*, custome to whome custome, feare to whome feare, honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to loue one another: for hee that loueth another hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore loue is the fulfilling of the Law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleepe: for now is our saluation neerer then when we beleeued.

12 The night is farre spent, the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast off the workes of darkenesse, and let vs put on the armour of light.

|| *Or, decently.*

13 Let vs walke ||honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambring and wantonnes, not in strife and enuying.

14 But put yee on the Lord Iesus Christ, and make not prouision for the flesh, to *fulfill* the lusts *thereof.*

CHAP. XIIII.

3 Men may not contemne nor condemne one the other for things indifferent: 13 But take heed that they giue no offence in them: 15 For that the Apostle prooueth vnlawfull by many reasons.

|| *Or, not to iudge* his *doubtfull thoughts.*

HIm that is weake in the faith receiue you, but not to ||doubtfull disputations.

2 For one beleeueth that he may eat all things: another who is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, iudge him that eateth. For God hath receiued him.

4 Who art thou that iudgest an other mans seruant? to his owne master he standeth or falleth; Yea he shall bee holden vp: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day aboue another: another

esteemeth euery

day *alike.* Let euery man bee ‖fully perswaded in his owne ‖ *Or, fully*
minde. *assured.*

6 He that ‖regardeth a day, regardeth it vnto the Lord; ‖ *Or,*
and hee that regardeth not the day, to the Lord hee doeth *obserueth.*
not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for hee
giueth God thankes: and hee that eateth not, to the Lord
hee eateth not, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, and no man dieth to
himselfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: and whether
wee die, we die vnto the Lord: whether wee liue therefore
or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this ende Christ both died, and rose, and reuiued,
that hee might be Lord both of the dead and liuing.

10 But why doest *thou iudge thy brother? or why dost *2. Cor. 5.
thou set at nought thy brother? wee shall all stand before 10.
the Iudgement seat of Christ.

11 For it is written, *As I liue, saith the Lord, euery knee *Esay 45.
shall bow to mee, and euery tongue shall confesse to God. 23.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue accompt of himselfe
to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but
iudge this rather, that no man put a stumbling blocke, or an
occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Iesus, that there
is nothing †vncleane of it selfe: but to him that esteemeth †*Gr.*
any thing to bee †vncleane, to him it is vncleane. *common.* †*Gr.*

15 But if thy brother be grieued with *thy* meate: now *common.*
walkest thou not †charitably. Destroy not him with thy †*Gr. accor-*
meat, for whom Christ died. *ding to charitie.*

16 Let not then your good be euill spoken of. 1. *Cor.* 8.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drinke; but 11.
righteousnes, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For hee that in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable
to God, and approued of men.

19 Let vs therefore follow after the things which make for
peace, and things wherewith one may edifie an other.

20 For meat, destroy not the worke of God: all *things *Tit. 1.
indeed are pure; but it is euill for that man who eateth with 15.
offence.

21 It is good neither to eate *flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor *1. Cor. 8.
any thing where- 13.
by

by thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weake.

22 Hast thou faith? haue it to thy selfe before God. Happie is he that condemneth not himselfe in that *thing which* hee alloweth.

|| *Or, discerneth, & putteth a difference between meats*

23 And hee that ||doubteth, is damned if hee eate, because *hee eateth* not of faith: For whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must beare with the weake. 2 We may not please our selues, 3 for Christ did not so, 7 but receiue one the other, as Christ did vs all, 8 both Iewes 9 and Gentiles. 15 Paul excuseth his writing, 28 and promiseth to see them, 30 and requesteth their prayers.

WEe then that are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selues.

2 Let euery one of vs please his neighbour for *his* good to edification.

3 For euen Christ pleased not himselfe, but as it is written, *The reproches of them that reproched thee, fell on mee.

*Psal. 69. 9.

4 For whatsoeuer things were written aforetime, were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

*1. Cor. 1. 10.

5 *Now the God of patience and consolation graunt you to be like minded one towards another, ||according to Christ Iesus:

|| *Or, after the example of.*

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherfore receiue yee one another, as Christ also receiued vs, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a Minister of the circumcision for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises *made* vnto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercie, as it is written, *For this cause I will confesse to thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.

*Psal. 18. 50

10 And againe he saith, *Reioyce yee Gentiles with his people.

*Deut. 32. 43.

11 And againe, *Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

*Psal. 117. 1

12 And againe Esaias saith, *There

*Es. 11. 10.

shal be a roote of Iesse, and he that shal rise to raigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Nowe the God of hope fill you with all ioy and peace in beleeuing, that yee may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Neuerthelesse, brethren, I haue written the more boldly vnto you, in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is giuen to mee of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the ||offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

|| *Or, sacrificing.*

17 I haue therfore whereof I may glory through Iesus Christ, in those things which pertaine to God.

18 For I will not dare to speake of any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deede,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue fully preached the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so haue I striued to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build vpon another mans foundation:

21 But as it is written, *To whom hee was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that haue not heard, shall vnderstand.

*Esa. 52. 15

22 For which cause also I haue been ||much hindered from comming to you.

|| *Or, many wayes, or oftentimes.*

23 But now hauing no more place in these parts, and hauing a great desire these many yeeres to come vnto you:

24 Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with †your *company*.

† *Gr. with you.*

25 But now I goe vnto Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

Ver. 32.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine contribution for the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them *verely*, and

their detters they are. For if the Gentiles haue bene made partakers of their spirituall things, their duetie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I haue performed this, and hane sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine.

29 And I am sure that when I come vnto you, I shall come in the fulnes of the blessing of yͤ Gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that ye striue together with me, in your praiers to God for me,

|| *Or, are dis-obedient.*

31 That I may bee deliuered from them that ||do not beleeue in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue for Hierusalem, may bee accepted of the Saints:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace bee with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul willeth the brethren to greete many, 17 and aduiseth them to take heede of those which cause dissention and offences, 21 and after sundry salutations endeth with praise and thankes to God.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord as becommeth Saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she hath need of you: for she hath beene a succourer of many, and of my selfe also.

3 Greete Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Iesus:

4 (Who haue for my life laid downe their owne neckes: vnto whome not onely I giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise *greet* the Church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloued Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia vnto Christ.

6 Greete Marie, who bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my kinsmen, and my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the Apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Appelles approoued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus ||houshold. || *Or, friends.*

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the ||houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord. || *Or, friends*

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus & Iulia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, marke them which cause diuisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoide them.

18 For they that are such, serue not our Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne belly, and by good wordes and faire speeches deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad vnto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, and ||simple concerning euill. || *Or, harmelesse.*

20 And the God of peace shal ||bruise Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen. || *Or, tread.*

21 Timotheus my worke-fellow, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsemen salute you.

22 I Tertius who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church, saluteth you. Erastus the Chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my Gospel, and the preaching of Iesus Christ, according to the reuelation of the the my-

sterie, which was kept secret since the world began:

26 But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the Prophets according to the commandement of the euerlasting God, made knowen to all nations for the obedience of faith,

¶ THE FIRST
# of Paul the
Corin

CHAP. I.

After his salutation, and thankesgiuing, 10 he exhorteth them to vnitie, and 12 reprooueth their dissentions. 18 God destroyeth the wisedome of the wise, 21 by the foolishnesse of preaching, and 26 calleth not the wise, mighty, and noble, but 27. 28 the foolish, weake, and men of no accompt.

PAul called *to be* an Apostle of Iesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes *our* brother,

2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinth, to them
*Acts. 15. 9. that *are sanctified in Christ Iesus, called *to be* Saints, *with
*Rom. 1. 7. all that in euery place call vpon the Name of Iesus Christ
our Lord, both theirs and ours.

3 Grace be vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for the grace of God which is giuen you by Iesus Christ,

5 That in euery thing yee are enriched by him, in all vtterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Euen as the Testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that yee come behinde in no gift; wayting for the
†*Gr. Reuelation.* †comming of our Lord Iesus Christ,

8 Who shall also confirme you vnto

27 To God, onely wise, bee glorie through Iesus Christ, for euer. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe seruant of the Church at Cenchrea.

EPISTLE

Apostle to the

thians.

the end, that yee may be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 *God is faithful by whom ye were called vnto the felow- *1. Thess.
ship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord. 5. 24.

10 Now I beseech you brethren by the Name of our Lord
Iesus Christ, that yee all speake the same thing, and that
there be no †diuisions among you: but that ye be perfectly †*Greeke,*
ioyned together in the same minde, and in the same iudgement. *schismes.*

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that euery one of you saith, I am of
Paul, and I of *Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ. *Acts. 18.
13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified for you? or were 24.
yee baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you, but *Crispus *Acts. 18.
and Gaius: 8.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine owne name.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the
Gospel: *not with wisedome of ||words, lest the Crosse of *2. Pet. 1.
Christ should be made of none effect. 16.
18 For the preaching of the Crosse is to them that perish, ||*Or, speech.*
foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saued, it is the *power *Rom. 1.
of God. 16.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and wil bring to nothing the *vnderstanding of the prudent.

*Esa. 29. 14

20 *Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisedome of this world?

*Esa. 33. 18

21 *For after that, in the wisedom of God, the world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching, to saue them that beleeue.

*Rom. 1. 20

22 For the *Iewes require a signe, and the Greekes seeke after wisedome.

*Matt. 12. 38.

23 But wee preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbling block, and vnto the Greekes, foolishnesse:

24 But vnto them which are called, both Iewes and Greekes, Christ, the power of God, & the wisedome of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the weakenesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble *are called.*

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weake things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty:

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, *yea* and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisedome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written, *He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

*Iere. 9. 23.

CHAP. II.

Hee declareth that his preaching, 1 though it bring not excellency of speech, or of 4 humane wisedome: yet consisteth in the 4. 5 power of God: and so farre excelleth 6 the wisedome of this world, and 9 humane sense, as that 14 the naturall man cannot vnderstand it.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, *came not with excellencie of speech, or of wisedome, declaring vnto you the testimony of God.

*Wis. 1. 17.

2 For I determined not to know any thing amōg you, saue
Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakenesse, and in feare, and in
much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching *was not with *2. Pet. 1.
||entising words of mans wisedome, but in demonstration 10.
of the Spirit, and of power: || *Or, perswasible.*

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdome of †*Gr. be.*
men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit wee speake wisedome among them that are
perfect: yet not the wisedome of this worlde, nor of the
Princes of this worlde, that come to nought:

7 But wee speake the wisedome of God in a mysterie, *euen*
the hidden *wisedome* which God ordeined before the world,
vnto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knewe: for had
they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of
glory.

9 But as it is written, *Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, *Esa. 64.
neither haue entred into the heart of man, the things which 4.
God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reueiled *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for
the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the
spirit of man which is in him? Euen so the things of God
knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now wee haue receiued, not the spirit of the world, but
the Spirit which is of God, that wee might know the things
that are freely giuen to vs of God.

13 *Which things also we speake, not in the words which *2. Pet. 1.
mans wisedome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, 16
comparing spiritual things with spirituall.

14 But the naturall man receiueth not the things of the *Pro. 27.
Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither 19
can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned. || *Or, discerneth.*

15 *But he that is spirituall, ||iudgeth all things, yet he || *Or, discerned.*
himselfe is ||iudged of no man.

16 *For who hath knowen the mind *Rom. 11. 34.
of esa. 40. 13.

† *Gr. shall.* of the Lord that he †may instruct him? But we haue the mind of Christ.

CHAP. III.

2 Milke is fit for children. 3 Strife and diuision, arguments of a fleshly minde. 7 Hee that planteth, and hee that watereth, is nothing. 9 The ministers are Gods fellowe workemen. 11 Christ the only foundation. 16 Men the temples of God, which 17 must bee kept holy. 19 The wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God.

ANd I, brethren, could not speake vnto you as vnto spirituall, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I haue fed you with milke, and not with meate: for hitherto yee were not able *to beare it*, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you
|| *Or, factions* enuying, and strife, and ||diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke †as men?
† *Gr. according to man.*

4 For while one saieth, I am of Paul, and another, *I am* of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul? and who is Apollo? but ministers by whom ye beleeued, euen as the Lord gaue to euery man.

6 I haue planted, Apollo watered: but God gaue the encrease.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither hee that watereth: but God that giueth the increase.

* Psal. 63. 13 gal. 6. 5. 8 Now hee that planteth, and hee that watereth, are one: *and euery man shal receiue his own reward according to his owne labour.

9 For wee are labourers together with God, ye are Gods
|| *Or, tillage.* ||husbandry, yee are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is giuen vnto mee, as a wise master builder I haue laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let euery man take heede how hee buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laide, which is Iesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build vpon this foundation, gold, siluer, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Euery mans worke shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, be-

cause it †shall bee reuealed by fire, and the fire shall trie † *Gr. is reuealed.*
euery mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke abide which he hath built thereupon,
he shal receiue a reward.

15 If any mans worke shall bee burnt, he shall suffer losse:
but he himselfe shall be saued: yet so, as by fire.

16 *Knowe yee not that yee are the Temple of God, and *1. Cor. 6. 19.
that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man ‖defile the Temple of God, him shall God ‖ *Or, destroy.*
destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which *Temple*
ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himselfe: If any man among you
seemeth to bee wise in this world, let him become a foole,
that he may be wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with
God: for it is written, *Hee taketh the wise in their owne *Iob. 5. 13.
craftinesse.

20 And againe, *The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the *Psal. 94. 11.
wise, that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are
yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or
life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are
yours.

23 And yee are Christs, and Christ *is* Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 In what account the Ministers ought to bee had. 7 We haue nothing which wee haue not receiued. 9 The Apostles spectacles to the world, Angels and men, 13 The filth and off-scouring of the worlde: 15 Yet our fathers in Christ, 16 Whome wee ought to followe.

LEt a man so account of vs, as of the ministers of Christ,
and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreouer, it is required in stewards, that a man be found
faithfull.

3 But with mee it is a very small thing that I should bee
iudged of you, or of mans †iudgement: yea, I iudge not † *Gr. day.*
mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not hereby
iustified: but hee that iudgeth me is the Lord.

5 *Therefore iudge nothing before *Matt. 7. 1. rom. 2. 1.
the

the time, vntill the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkenesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall euery man haue prayse of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I haue in a figure transferred to my selfe, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learne in vs not to thinke *of men*, aboue that which is written, that no one of you bee puffed vp for one against another.

† *Gr. distinguisheth thee?*

7 For who †maketh thee to differ *from another?* And what hast thou that thou didst not receiue? Now if thou didst receiue it, why doest thou glory as if thou hadst not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye haue reigned as kings without vs, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

† *Gr. theater.*

9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the Apostles last, as it were approued to death. For wee are made a †spectacle vnto the world, and to Angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fooles for Christs sake, but ye *are* wise in Christ. We *are* weake, but ye *are* strong: yee are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Euen vnto this present houre we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling place,

* Act. 20. 34
1 thess. 2. 9.
2 thess. 3. 8.

12 *And labour, working with our owne hands: being reuiled, wee blesse: being persecuted, we suffer it:

* Mat. 5. 44

13 *Being defamed, we intreate: we are made as the filth of the world, and *are* the off-scouring of all things vnto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though you haue ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet *haue yee* not many fathers: For in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be yee followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, who is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, who shal bring you into remembrance of my wayes which be in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Nowe some are puffed vp as

though I would not come to you.

19 *But I wil come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will knowe, not the speach of them which are puffed vp, but the power.

*Acts 19. 21. Iam 4. 15.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? Shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person 6 is cause rather of shame vnto them, then of reioycing. 7 The olde leauen is to be purged out. 10 Heinous offenders are to be shamed & auoided.

IT is reported commonly, *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And yee are puffed vp, and haue not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might bee taken away from among you.

3 *For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue ||iudged alreadie, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed,

*Col. 2. 5.
|| *Or, determined.*

4 In the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, when yee are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 *To deliuer such *a one* vnto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

*1. Tim. 1. 20.

6 Your glorying is not good: *know ye not that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

*Gal. 5. 9.

7 Purge out therefore the olde leauen, that ye may be a new lumpe, as ye are vnleauened. For *euen* Christ our Passeouer ||is sacrificed for vs.

|| *Or, is slain.*

8 Therefore let vs keepe ||the Feast, not with old leauen, neither with the leauen of malice and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of sinceritie and trueth.

|| *Or, holiday.*

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, not to company with fornicators.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must yee needs goe out of the world.

11 But now I haue written vnto

you, not to keepe company, if any man that is called a brother bee a fornicator, or couetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one, no, not to eate.

12 For what haue I to doe to iudge them also that are without? doe not ye iudge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God iudgeth. Therefore put away from among your selues that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Corinthians must not vexe their brethren, in going to law with them: 6 Especially vnder Infidels. 9 The vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God. 15 Our bodies are the members of Christ, 19 And Temples of the holy Ghost. 16. 17 They must not therefore be defiled.

DAre any of you, hauing a matter against another, goe to law before the vniust, and not before the Saints?

2 Do ye not know that the Saints shall iudge the world? And if the world shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall iudge Angels? How much more things that perteine to this life?

4 If then yee haue iudgements of things perteining to this life, set them to iudge who are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall bee able to iudge betweene his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, & that before the vnbeleeuers?

7 Now therefore, there is vtterly a fault among you, because yee goe to law one with another: Why doe ye not rather take wrong? Why doe yee not rather suffer your selues to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know yee not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselues with mankinde,

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor reuilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were some of you: but

ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto mee, but all things are not ||expedient: all things are lawfull for mee, but I will not bee brought vnder the power of any.

|| *Or, profitable.*

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meates: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised vp the Lord, and will also raise vp vs by his owne power.

15 Know yee not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is ioyned to an harlot, is one body? for two (saith he) shalbe one flesh.

17 But hee that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: Euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body.

19 What, know ye not that your body is the Temple of the holy Ghost *which is* in you, which yee haue of God, and ye are not your owne?

20 For yee are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

CHAP. VII.

2 He treateth of mariage, 4 shewing it to be a remedy against fornication: 10 And that the bond thereof ought not lightly to be dissolued. 18. 20 Euery man must be content with his vocation. 25 Virginitie wherefore to be imbraced. 35 And for what respects we may either marry, or abstaine from marying.

NOw cōcerning the things wherof ye wrote vnto me, It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuerthelesse, *to auoid* fornication, let euery man haue his owne wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

3 Let the husband render vnto the wife due beneuolence: and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewise

wise also the husband hath not power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except *it bee* with consent for a time, that yee may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and come together againe, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the vnmaried and widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I.

9 But if they cannot conteine, let them marry: for it is better to marrie then to burne.

10 And vnto the married, I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if shee depart, let her remaine vnmaried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speake I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that beleeueth not, and shee bee pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, and if hee be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leaue him.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified by the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified by the husband; else were your children vncleane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not vnder bondage in such *cases:* but God hath called vs †to peace.

† *Gr. in peace*

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke, and so ordeine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become vncircumcised: Is any called in vncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the kee-

ping of the Commandements of God.

20 Let euery man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if thou maist be made free, vse it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a seruant, is the Lords †free man: likewise also hee that is called *being* free, is Christs seruant.

† *Gr. made free.*

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the seruants of men.

24 Brethren, let euery man wherin he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Nowe concerning virgins, I haue no commaundement of the Lord: yet I giue my iudgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present ||distresse, *I say*, that it is good for a man so to be.

|| *Or, necessitie.*

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to bee loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if a virgin marry, shee hath not sinned: neuerthelesse, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that haue wiues, be as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would haue you without carefulnesse. He that is vnmarried, careth for the things that belōgeth to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But hee that is maried, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: the vnmaried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that shee may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the worlde, how shee may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne profite, not that I may cast a snare vpon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend vp-

on the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man thinke that he behaueth himselfe vncomely toward his virgin, if she passe the floure of *her* age, and neede so require, let him doe what hee will, hee sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Neuerthelesse, hee that standeth stedfast in his heart, hauing no necessitie, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keepe his virgin, doeth well.

38 So then he that giueth her in mariage, doeth wel: but he that giueth her not in mariage, doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Lawe as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband bee dead, shee is at liberty to bee maried to whom shee will, onely in the Lord.

40 But shee is happier if shee so -bide, after my iudgment: and I thinke also that I haue the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 To abstaine from meates offered to Idoles: 8. 9 We must not abuse our Christian libertie, to the offence of our brethren: 11 but must bridle our knowledge with Charitie.

NOw as touching things offered vnto idoles, wee know that wee all haue knowledge. Knowledge puffeth vp: but Charitie edifieth.

2 And if any man thinke that hee knoweth any thing, hee knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, wee know that an idole is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there bee that are called gods, whether in heauen or in earth (as there be gods many, and lords many:)

6 But to vs there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we ||in him, and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

|| *Or, for him,* Rom. 11. 36.

7 Howbeit there is not in euerie man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idole vnto this houre, eate it as a thing offred vnto an idole,

and their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meate commendeth vs not to God: for neither if we eate, ||are we the better: neither if wee eate not, ||are we the worse.

|| *Or, haue we the more.*
|| *Or, haue we the lesse.*

9 But take heed lest by any meanes, this ||libertie of yours become a stumbling blocke to them that are weake.

|| *Or, power.*

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meat in the idols temple: shall not the conscience of him which is weake, be †emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols?

† *Gr. edified.*

11 And through thy knowledge shal the weake brother perish, for whome Christ died?

12 But when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meate make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth his libertie, 7 and that the minister ought to liue by the Gospel: 15 yet that himselfe hath of his owne accord abstained, 18 to be either chargeable vnto them: 22 or offensiue vnto any, in matters indifferent. 24 Our life is like vnto a race.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? Are not you my worke in the Lord?

2 If I bee not an Apostle vnto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seale of mine Apostleship are yee in the Lord.

3 Mine answere to them that doe examine me, is this:

4 Haue wee not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Haue we not power to lead about a sister a ||wife aswel as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

|| *Or, woman.*

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not we power to forbeare working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the Law the same also?

9 For

*Deut. 25. 4.

9 For it is written in the Law of Moyses, *Thou shalt not muzzell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or saith hee it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written: that hee that ploweth, should plow in hope: and that hee that thresheth in hope, should bee partaker of his hope.

*Rom. 15. 27.

11 *If we haue sowen vnto you spirituall things, is it a great thing if wee shall reape your carnall things?

12 If others bee partakers of this power ouer you, *are* not we rather? Neuerthelesse, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things, lest wee should hinder the Gospel of Christ.

*Deut. 18. 1.

||*Or, feed.*

13 *Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, ||liue of the things of the Temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 Euen so hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things. Neither haue I written these things, that it should bee so done vnto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying voyd.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to glorie of: for necessitie is laid vpon mee, yea, woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe this thing willingly, I haue a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation *of the Gospel* is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospel.

19 For though I bee free from all men, yet haue I made my selfe seruant vnto all, that I might gaine the more.

20 And vnto the Iewes, I became as a Iew, that I might gaine the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Law, as vnder the Law, that I might gaine them that are vnder the Law:

21 To them that are without Law, as without Law (being not without Law to God, but vnder the Law to Christ,) that I might gaine them that are without Law.

22 To the weake became I as

weake, that I might gaine the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some.

23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with *you.*

24 Know yee not that they which runne in a race, runne all, but one receiueth the price? So runne, that yee may obtaine.

25 And euery man that striueth for the masterie, is temperate in all things: Now they *doe it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre:

27 But I keepe vnder my body, and bring it into subiection: lest that by any meanes when I haue preached to others, I my selfe should be a castaway.

CHAP. X.

1 The Sacraments of the Iewes, 6 are types of ours, 7 and their punishments, 11 examples for vs. 14 We must flie from idolatrie. 21 We must not make the Lords Table the table of deuils: 24 And in things indifferent, we must haue regard of our brethren.

MOreouer brethren, I would not that yee should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were vnder the cloud, and all passed thorow the Sea:

2 And were all baptized vnto Moyses in the cloud, and in the sea:

3 And did all eat the same spirituall meat:

4 And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke: (for they dranke of that spirituall Rocke that ||followed them: and that Rocke was Christ)

|| *Or, went with them.*

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were ouerthrowen in the wildernesse.

6 Now these things were †our examples, to the intent wee should not lust after euil things, as they also lusted.

† *Gr. our figures.*

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as *were* some of them, as it is written, *The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play.

*Exod. 32. 6. psal. 106. 14.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed, and *fell in one day three and twentie thousand.

*Num. 25. 9.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some

*Num. 21. 6.

some of them also tempted, *and were destroyed of serpents.

*Num. 14. 37.

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, and were *destroyed of the destroyer.

||Or, Types.

11 Now all these things happened vnto them for ||ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

|| Or, moderate.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is ||common to man: but God is faithfull, who wil not suffer you to bee tempted aboue that you are able: but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may bee able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my dearely beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as to wise men: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which wee blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the Altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

*Deut. 32. 17. psal. 106. 37.

20 But *I say* that the things which the Gentiles *sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not to God: and I would not that yee should haue fellowship with deuils.

21 Yee cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of deuils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords Table, and of the table of deuils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lord to iealousie? are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: All things are lawfull for mee, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne: but euery man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, that eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

*Deut. 10. 14. psal. 24. 1.

26 For *the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.

27 If any of them that beleeue not,

bid you *to a feast*, and yee be disposed to goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, eate not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. *The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof. Deut. 10. 14. psal. 24. 1.

29 Conscience I say, not thine owne, but of the others: for why is my libertie iudged of another mans conscience?

30 For, if I by ||grace be a partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that for which I giue thankes? || *Or, thankes-giuing.*

31 Whether therfore ye eat or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the †Gentiles, nor to the Church of God: † *Gr. Greeks*

33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reprooueth them, because in holy assemblies, 4 their men prayed with their heads couered, and 6 women with their heads vncouered, 17 and because generally their meetings were not for the better but for the worse, as 21 namely in profaning with their owne feasts the Lords Supper. 25 Lastly, he calleth them to the first institution thereof.

BE yee followers of mee, euen as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I prayse you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keepe the ||ordinances, as I deliuered them to you. || *Or, traditions.*

3 But I would haue you knowe, that the head of euery man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Euery man praying or prophecying, hauing his head couered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head vncouered, dishonoureth her head: for that is euen all one as if she were shauen.

6 For if the woman be not couered, let her also bee shorne: but if it bee a shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For a man in deede ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as hee is the

image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

|| *That is, a couering, in signe that she is vnder the power of her husband*

10 For this cause ought the woman to haue power ||on her head, because of the Angels.

11 Neuerthelesse, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: euen so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not euen nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?

|| *Or, vaile.*

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a glory to her: for her haire is giuen her for a ||couering.

16 But if any man seeme to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare *vnto you*, I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

|| *Or, schismes.*

18 For first of all when yee come together in the Church, I heare that there be ||diuisions among you, and I partly beleeue it.

|| *Or, sects.*

19 For there must bee also ||heresies among you, that they which are approued may be made manifest among you.

|| *Or, ye cannot eate.*

20 When yee come together therefore into one place, *this is* ||not to eate the Lords Supper.

21 For in eating, euery one taketh before *other*, his owne supper: and one is hungry, and an other is drunken.

|| *Or, them that are poore.*

22 What, haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? Or despise yee the Church of God, and shame ||them that haue not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I prayse you not.

*Mat. 26. 16 mar. 14. 22. luk. 22. 19.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which also I deliuered vnto you, that the Lord Iesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, tooke bread:

|| *Or, for a remēbrance.*

24 *And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, and sayd, Take, eate, this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ||in remembrance of mee.

25 After the same manner also *hee tooke* the cup when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new Testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eate this bread, and drinke this cup, ||yee doe shew the Lords death till he come. || *Or, shew yee.*

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and drinke this cup of the Lord vnworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let him eate of that bread, and drinke of that cup.

29 For hee that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh ||damnation to himselfe, not discerning the Lords body. || *Or, iudgement.*

30 For this cause many are weake and sickly among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, that wee should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tary one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto ||condemnation. And the rest wil I set in order, when I come. || *Or iudgement.*

CHAP. XII.

1 Spirituall gifts 4 are diuers, 7 yet all to profit withall. 8 And to that ende, are diuersly bestowed: 12 That by the like proportion, as the members of a naturall body, tend all to the 16 mutuall decency, 22 seruice, and 26 succour of the same body; 27 so wee should doe one for another, to make vp the mysticall body of Christ.

Now concerning spirituall *giftes*, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Yee know that yee were Gentiles, caryed away vnto these dumbe idoles, euen as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I giue you to vnderstand, that no man speaking by the spirit of God, calleth Iesus ||accursed: and that no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost. || *Or, Anathema.*

4 Nowe there are diuersities of gifts, but the same spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the spirit, is giuen to euery man to profit withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the spirit, the word of wisedome, to another the word of knowledge, by the same spirit.

9 To another faith, by the same spirit: to another the gifts of healing, by the same spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophecie, to another discerning of spirits, to another *diuers* kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one and the selfe same spirit, diuiding to euery man seuerally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the membrs of that one body, being many, are one bodie: so also *is* Christ.

13 For by one spirit are we all baptized into one bodie, whether *wee bee* Iewes or †Gentiles, whether *wee bee* bond or free: and haue beene all made to drinke into one spirit.

† *Gr. Greeks.*

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members, euery one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no need of thee: nor againe, the head to the feete, I haue no neede of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the bodie, which seeme to bee more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those *members* of the bodie, which wee thinke to bee lesse honourable, vpon these we ‖bestow more abundant honour, and our vncomely parts

‖ *Or, put on.*

haue more abundant comelinesse.

24 For our comely *parts* haue no need: but God hath tempered the bodie together, hauing giuen more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no ‖schisme in the body: but that the members should haue the same care one for another. ‖ *Or, diuision.*

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now yee are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helpes in gouernmēts, ‖diuersities of tongues. ‖ *Or, kinds.*

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers? are all ‖workers of miracles? ‖ *Or, powers.*

30 Haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interpret?

31 But couet earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I vnto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 All giftes, 2. 3 how excellent soeuer, are nothing worth without charitie. 4 The praises therof, and 13 prelation before hope & faith.

THough I speake with the tongues of men & of Angels, and haue not charity, I am become as sounding brasse or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I haue the gift of prophesie, and vnderstand all mysteries and all knowledge: and though I haue all faith, so that I could remooue mountaines, and haue no charitie, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestowe all my goods to feede the poore, and though I giue my body to bee burned, and haue not charitie, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charitie suffereth long, and is kinde: charitie enuieth not: charitie ‖vaunteth not it selfe, is not puffed vp, ‖ *Or, is not rash.*

5 Doeth not behaue it selfe vnseemly, seeketh not her owne, is not easily prouoked, thinketh no euill,

6 Reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth ‖in the trueth: ‖ *Or, with the trueth.*

7 Beareth all things, beleeueth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charitie neuer faileth: but whether there be prophesies, *they* shall faile; whether there bee tongues, *they* shall cease; whether there bee knowledge, *it* shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part, shalbe done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I ‖thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

‖ *Or, reasoned.*

12 For now we see through a glasse, †darkely: but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know euen as also I am knowen.

† *Gr. in a riddle.*

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three, but the greatest of these is charitie.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Prophecie is commended, 2. 3. 4 and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison drawen from musicall instruments. 12 Both must bee referred to edification, 22 as to their true and proper end. 26 The true vse of each is taught, 27 and the abuse taxed. 34 Women are forbidden to speake in the Church.

FOllow after charitie, and desire spirituall giftes, but rather that yee may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an *vnknowen* tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man †vnderstandeth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

† *Gr. heareth*

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an *vnknowen* tongue, edifieth himselfe: but hee that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I would that yee all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is hee that prophesieth, then hee that speaketh with tongues, except hee interprete, that the Church may receiue edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come vnto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speake to you either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And euen things without life giuing sound, whether pipe or harpe, except they giue a distinction in the ‖sounds, how shall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

‖ *Or, tunes.*

8 For if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to the battell?

9 So likewise you, except ye vtter by the tongue words †easie to be vnderstood, how shall it be knowen what is spoken? for ye shall speake into the aire.

† *Gr. significant.*

10 There are, it may bee, so many kindes of voices in the world, and none *of them* are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voyce, I shall bee vnto him that speaketh, a Barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a Barbarian vnto mee.

12 Euen so ye, forasmuch as yee are zealous †of spirituall *gifts*, seeke that yee may excell to the edifying of the Church.

† *Gr. of spirits.*

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an *vnknowen* tongue, pray that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in an *vnknowen* tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and wil pray with vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Else, when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall hee that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, say Amen at thy giuing of thankes, seeing he vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily giuest thankes well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I speake with tongues more then you all.

19 Yet in the Church I had rather speake fiue words with my vnderstanding, that *by my voyce* I might teach others also, then ten thousand words in an *vnknowen* tongue.

20 Brethren, bee not children in vnderstanding: how be it, in malice be yee children, but in vnderstanding be †men.

† *Gr. perfect or of a ripe age.*

21 In the Law it is *written, With *men of* other tongues, and other lippes will I speake vnto this people: and yet for all that will they not heare me, saith the Lord.

Esa. 28. 11.

22 Wherfore tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: But prophesying *serueth*

ueth not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore the whole Church be come together into some place, and all speake with tongues, & there come in those that are vnlearned, or vnbeleeuers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned: he is conuinced of all, he is iudged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling downe on his face, hee will worship God, and report that God is in you of a trueth.

26 How is it then brethren? when ye come together, euery one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a reuelatiō, hath an interpretatiō: Let all things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake in *an vnknowen* tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge.

30 If *any thing* be reueiled to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For yee may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not *the authour* of †confusion, but of peace, as in all Churches of the Saints.

† *Gr. tumult, or vnquietnesse.*

34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permitted vnto them to speake; but *they are commanded* to bee vnder obedience: as also saith the *Law.

*Gen. 3. 16.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 But if any man bee ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to pro-

phesie, and forbid not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

CHAP. XV.

3 By Christes resurrection, 12 he proueth the necessitie of our resurrection, against all such as deny the resurrection of the body. 21 The fruit, 35 and maner thereof, 51 And of the changing of them, that shall bee found aliue at the last day.

MOreouer brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which also you haue receiued, and wherein yee stand.

2 By which also yee are saued, if yee ||keepe in memorie †what I preached vnto you, vnlesse yee haue beleeued in vaine.

|| *Or, hold fast.*
† *Gr. by what speech.*

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all, that which I also receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes according to the Scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose againe the third day according to the Scriptures.

5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.

5 And that hee was seene of aboue fiue hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remaine vnto this present, but some are fallen asleepe.

7 After that, he was seen of Iames, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all he was seene of me also, as of †one borne out of due time.

|| *Or, an abortiue.*

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle because I persecuted yͤ Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was *bestowed* vpō me, was not in vaine: But I laboured more abundantly then they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me:

11 Therefore, whether it were I or they, so we preach, aud so ye beleeued.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine:

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, because we haue testified of God, that he raised vp Christ: whom hee raised not vp, if so bee that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine, ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 Then they also which are fallen asleepe in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life only we haue hope in Christ, wee are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* become the first fruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made aliue.

23 But euery man in his owne order. Christ the first fruits, afterward they that are Christs, at his comming.

24 Then *commeth* the end, when he shall haue deliuered vp the kingdome to God euen the Father, when he shall haue put downe all rule, and all authority and power.

25 For he must reigne, till hee hath put all enemies vnder his feete.

26 The last enemie *that* shall be destroyed, *is* death.

27 For he hath put all things vnder his feete; but when hee saith all things are put vnder him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things vnder him.

28 And when all things shall bee subdued vnto him, then shal the Sonne also himselfe bee subiect vnto him that put all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shal they do, which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in ieopardy euery houre?

31 I protest by ||your reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die dayly.

|| Some reade, *our*.

32 If ||after the maner of men I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus, what aduantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let vs eate and drinke, for to morrowe wee die.

|| *Or, to speak after the maner of men.*

33 Bee not deceiued: euill commu-

nications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sinne not: for some haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raysed vp? and with what body doe they come?

36 Thou foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare graine, it may chance of wheate, or of some other *graine.*

38 But God giueth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to euery seed his owne body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one *kind of* flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: But the glorie of the celestiall is one, and the glorie of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the sunne; another of the moone, and another glorie of the starres: for *one* starre differeth from *another* starre in glorie.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sowen in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sowen in dishonour, it is raysed in glorie: it is sowen in weakenesse, it is raysed in power:

44 It is sowen a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall bodie. There is a naturall bodie, and there is a spirituall bodie.

45 And so it is written: The first man Adam was made a liuing soule, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: The second man *is* the Lord from heauen.

48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy, and as is the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthy, wee shall also beare the image of the heauenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh & blood cannot inherite the kingdome of God: neither doth corruption inherite incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: we shall not all sleepe, but wee shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye, at the last trumpe, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible shall haue put on incorruption, & this mortall shall haue put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed vp in victorie.

Ose. 13. 14

55 O death, where is thy sting? O ||graue, where is thy victorie?

|| *Or, hell.*

56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the law.

57 But thankes bee to God, which giueth vs the victorie, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be yee stedfast, vnmoueable, alwayes abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Hee exhorteth them to relieue the want of the brethren at Ierusalem. 10 Commendeth Timothy, 13 And after friendly admonitions, 16 Shutteth vp his Epistle with diuers salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the Saints, as I haue giuen order to the Churches of Galatia, euen so doe ye.

2 Vpon the first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoeuer you shall approue by *your* letters, them wil I send to bring your †liberality vnto Ierusalem.

† *Gr. gift.*

4 And if it be meet that I goe also, they shall goe with me.

5 Now I wil come vnto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: for I doe passe through Macedonia.

6 And it may bee that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that yee may bring me on my iourny, whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I will not see you now by

the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto mee, and there are many aduersaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without feare: for hee worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that hee may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come vnto you with ẏͤ brethren, but his wil was not at all to come at this time: but he wil come when hee shall haue conuenient time.

13 Watch yee, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men: be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charitie.

15 I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they haue addicted themselues to the ministery of the Saints,)

16 That ye submit your selues vnto such, and to euery one that helpeth with vs and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they haue supplied.

18 For they haue refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge yee them that are such.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the Church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul, with mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him bee Anathema Maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you.

24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

¶ THE SECOND
# of Paul the
Corin

CHAP. I.

3 The Apostle incourageth them against troubles, by the comforts and deliuerances which God had giuen him, as in all his afflictions, 8 so particularly in his late danger in Asia. 12 And calling both his owne conscience, and theirs to witnesse, of his sincere maner of preaching the immutable trueth of the Gospel, 15 Hee excuseth his not comming to them, as proceeding not of lightnesse, but of his lenitie towards them.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothie *our* brother, vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *bee* to you and peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort, wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation, which is ||effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings, which wee also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation, and saluation.

|| *Or, is wrought.*

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing, that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall yee be* also of the consolatiou.

EPISTLE

Apostle to the

thians.

8 For we would not, brethren, haue you ignorant of our trouble which came to vs in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, aboue strength, in so much that we dispaired euen of life.

9 But we had the ||sentence of death in our selues, that we || *Or,*
should not trust in our selues, but in God which raiseth the *answere.*
dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and doeth deliuer: in whom we trust that he will yet deliuer *vs:*

11 You also helping together by prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs by the meanes of many persons, thankes may bee giuen by many on our behalfe.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly sinceritie, not with fleshly wisedome, but by the grace of God, wee haue had our conuersation in the world, and more aboundantly to youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then what you reade or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge euen to the end.

14 As also you haue acknowledged vs in part, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye also are ours, in the day of the Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come vnto you
before, that you might haue a second ||benefit: || *Or, grace.*

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and of you to bee brought on my way toward Iudea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, doe I purpose according to the flesh, that with mee there should be yea yea, and nay nay?

18 But *as* God is true, our ||word toward you, was not yea || *Or, prea-*
and nay. *ching.*

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *euen* by me, and Syluanus and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay, but in him, was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and in him Amen, vnto the glory of God by vs.

21 Now hee which stablisheth vs with you, in Christ, and hath anoynted vs, *is* God,

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreouer, I call God for a record vpō my soule, that to spare you I came not as yet vnto Corinth.

24 Not for that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 Hauing shewed the reason why he came not to them, 6 Hee requireth them to forgiue and to comfort that excommunicated person, 10 Euen as himselfe also vpon his true repentance had forgiuen him, 12 declaring withall why hee departed from Troas to Macedonia, 14 and the happy successe which God gaue to his preaching in all places.

BVt I determined this with my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauinesse.

2 For if I make you sorie, who is hee then that maketh mee glad, but the same which is made sorie by me.

3 And I wrote this same vnto you, least when I came, I should haue sorrow from them of whome I ought to reioyce, hauing confidence in you all, that my ioy is *the ioy* of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote vnto you with many teares, not that you should bee grieued, but that yee might knowe the loue which I haue more abundantly vnto you.

5 But if any haue caused griefe, hee hath not grieued mee, but in part: that I may not ouercharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this ||punishment, which *was inflicted* of many.

|| *Or, censure*

7 So that contrarywise, yee ought rather to forgiue him, and comfort him, lest perhaps, such a one should be swallowed vp with ouermuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you would confirme *your* loue towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proofe of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom yee forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* also: *for* if I forgaue any thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your sakes forgaue I it, in ||the person of Christ, || *Or, in the sight.*

11 Lest Satan should get an aduantage of vs: for wee are not ignorant of his deuices.

12 Furthermore when I came to Troas, to *preach* Christs Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto mee of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leaue of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thankes bee vnto God, which alwayes causeth vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For wee are vnto God, a sweet sauour of Christ, in them that are saued, and in them that perish.

16 To the one *wee are* the sauour of death vnto death; and to the other, the sauour of life vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

17 For wee are not as many which ||corrupt the word of God: but as of sinceritie, but as of God, in the sight of God speake we in Christ. || *Or, deale deceitfully with.*

CHAP. III.

1 Lest their false teachers should charge him with vaineglory, hee sheweth the faith and graces of the Corinthians, to bee a sufficient commendation of his ministerie. 6 Whereupon entring a comparison betweene the ministers of the Law & of the Gospel, 12 he proueth that his ministerie is so far the more excellent, as the Gospel of life and libertie is more glorious then the law of condemnation.

DOe wee begin againe to commend our selues? or need wee, as some *others*, Epistles of commendation to you, or *letters* of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our Epistle written in our hearts, knowen and read of all men.

3 *Forasmuch as* yee are manifestly declared *to be* the Epistle of Christ ministred by vs, written not with inke, but

with the spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue wee through Christ to Godward:

5 Not that wee are sufficient of our selues to thinke any thing as of our selues: but our sufficiencie *is* of God:

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the New Testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit ||giueth life.

|| *Or, quickneth.*

7 But if the ministration of death written, and ingrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly beholde the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which *glorie* was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit, be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation bee glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousnesse exceed in glorie.

10 For euen that which was made glorious, had no glorie in this respect by reason of the glorie that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away, was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that wee haue such hope, we vse great ||plainnesse of speech.

|| *Or, boldnes.*

13 And not as Moses, which put a vaile ouer his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly looke to the end of that which is abolished;

14 But their mindes were blinded: for vntill this day remaineth the same vaile vntaken away, in the reading of the old testament: which vaile is done away in Christ.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is vpon their heart.

16 Neuerthelesse, when it shall turne to the Lord, the vaile shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* libertie.

18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glorie to glorie, euen as ||by the spirit of the Lord.

|| *Or, of the Lord the spirit.*

CHAP. IIII.

1 He declareth how hee hath vsed all synceritie

and faithfull diligence in preaching the Gospel, 7 and how the troubles and persecutions which he dayly indured for the same, did redound to the praise of Gods power, 12 to the benefit of the Church, 16 and to the Apostles owne eternall glory.

THerefore, seeing we haue this ministery, as we haue receiued mercie wee faint not:

2 But haue renounced the hidden things of †dishonesty, not walking in craftines, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the trueth, commending our selues to euery mans conscience, in the sight of God. †*Gr. shame.*

3 But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which beleeue not, lest the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine vnto them.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

6 For God who commaunded the light to shine out of darkenes, hath shined in our hearts, *to giue* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of the power may be of God, and not of vs.

8 Wee are troubled on euery side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but ||not in despaire, || *Or, not altogether without helpe or meanes.*

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast downe, but not destroyed.

10 Alwayes bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our body.

11 For we which liue, are alway deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life in you.

13 We hauing the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, *I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken: wee also beleeue, and therefore speake. *Ps. 116. 10

14 Knowing that hee which raised vp the Lord Iesus, shall raise vp vs also by Iesus, and shall present vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes,

that the abundāt grace might, through the thankesgiuing of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a momēt, worketh for vs a farre more exceeding *and* eternall waight of glory,

18 While we looke not at the things which are seene, but at ÿ things which are not seene: for the things which are seene, are temporall, but the things which are not seene, are eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 That in his assured hope of immortall glorie, 9 and in expectance of it, and of the generall iudgement, hee laboureth to keepe a good conscience, 12 not that he may herein boast of himselfe, 14 but as one that hauing receiued life from Christ, indeuoureth to liue as a new creature to Christ onely, 18 and by his ministery of reconciliation to reconcile others also in Christ to God.

FOr we know, that if our earthly house of this Tabernacle were dissolued, wee haue a building of God, an house not made with hand, eternall in the heauens.

2 For in this we grone earnestly, desiring to be clothed vpō with our house, which is from heauen.

3 If so be that being clothed we shal not be found naked.

4 For, we that are in this tabernacle, doe grone, being burdened, not for that wee would bee vnclothed, but clothed vpon, that mortalitie might bee swallowed vp of life.

5 Now he ẏ hath wrought vs for the selfe same thing, *is* God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the spirit.

6 Therefore we are alwayes confident, knowing that whilest wee are at home in the body, wee are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, not by sight.)

8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

|| *Or, indeuour.*

9 Wherefore we ||labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

10 For we must all appeare before the iudgement seat of Christ, that euery one may receiue the things done in his body, according to that hee hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perswade men; but we are made manifest vnto God, & I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you occasion to glory on our behalfe, that you may haue somewhat *to answere* them, which glory †in appearance, and not in heart. † *Gr. in the face.*

13 For whether wee bee besides our selues, it is to God: or whether we bee sober, *it is* for your cause.

14 For the loue of Christ constreineth vs, because wee thus iudge: that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And that he died for all, that they which liue, should not hencefoorth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore hencefoorth know we no man, after the flesh: yea, though we haue knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now hencefoorth knowe wee him no more.

17 Therfore if any man *be* in Christ, ||*hee is* a new creature: *old things are past away, behold, al things are become new. || *Or, let him be.* * Esa. 43. 19 reuel. 21. 5.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled vs to himselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen to vs the ministery of reconciliation,

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world vnto himselfe, not imputing their trespasses vnto them, and hath †committed vnto vs the word of reconciliation. † *Gr. put in vs.*

20 Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by vs; we pray you in Christs stead, that be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, who knewe no sinne, that wee might bee made the righteousnesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

That hee hath approued himselfe a faithfull minister of Christ, both by his exhortations, 3 and by integritie of life, 4 and by patient enduring all kinds of affliction and disgraces for the Gospel. 10 Of which hee speaketh the more boldly amongst them, because his heart is open to them, 13 And he expecteth the like affection from them againe, 14 Exhorting to flee the societie and pollutions of Idolaters, as being themselues Temples of the liuing God.

WEe then, as workers together *with him*, beseech you also, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

Esa. 49. 8. 2 (For he saith, *I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: beholde, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of saluation)

3 Giuing no offence in any thing, that the ministery be not blamed:

†*Gr. commending.* 4 But in all things ||approuing our selues, as the Ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

|| *Or, in tossings to and fro.* 5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in ||tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

6 By purenesse, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the worde of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse, on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by euil report and good report, as deceiuers and yet true:

9 As vnknowen, & yet wel knowen: as dying, and behold, we liue: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway reioycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O yee Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Yee are not straitened in vs, but yee are straitned in your owne bowels.

13 Nowe for a recompense in the same, (I speake as vnto *my* children) be ye also inlarged.

14 Be ye not vnequally yoked together with vnbeleeuers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with vnrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeueth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles? for ye are the Temple of the liuing God, as God

hath saide, *I will dwell in them, and walke in *them*, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. *Leuit. 26. 12.

17 *Wherefore come out from among them, and bee yee separate, saieth the Lord, and touch not the vncleane thing, and I will receiue you, *Esa. 52. 11

18 *And will bee a Father vnto you, and ye shall bee my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almightie. *Iere. 31. 1

CHAP. VII.

1 Hee proceedeth in exhorting them to puritie of life, 2 and to beare him like affection as hee doeth to them. 3 Whereof, lest hee might seeme to doubt, hee declareth what comfort he tooke in his afflictions, by the report which Titus gaue of their godly sorrow, which his former Epistle had wrought in them, 13 and of their louing kindnes and obedience towards Titus, answerable to his former boastings of them.

HAuing therefore these promises (dearely beloued) let vs cleanse our selues from all filthines of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs, we haue wronged no man, wee haue corrupted no man, wee haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condemne *you:* for I haue said before, that you are in our hearts to die and liue with *you.*

4 Great is my boldnesse of speach toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding ioyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when wee were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on euery side; without *were* fightings, within *were* feares.

6 Neuerthelesse, God that comforteth those that are cast downe, comforted vs by the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming onely, but by the consolation wherewith hee was comforted in you, when he told vs your earnest desire, your mourning, your feruent minde toward me, so that I reioyced the more.

8 For though I made you sory with a letter, I doe not repent, though I did repent: For I perceiue that the same Epistle hath made you sory, thogh it were but for a season.

9 Now I reioyce, not that ye were made sorie, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorie ‖after a godly

‖ *Or, according to God.*

godly maner, that ye might receiue damage by vs in nothing.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to saluation not to be repented of, but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold this selfe same thing that yee sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of your selues, yea, *what* indignation, yea *what* feare, yea *what* vehement desire, yea *what* zeale, yea *what* reuenge; In all things yee haue approued your selues to be cleare in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, *I did it* not for his cause that had done the wrong, not for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea and exceedingly the more ioyed wee for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in trueth, euen so our boasting which I made before Titus, is found a trueth.

†*Gr. bowels.*

15 And his †inward affection is more aboundant toward you, whilest he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with feare and trembling you receiued him.

16 I reioyce therefore that I haue confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He stirreth them vp to a liberall contribution for the poore Saints at Ierusalem, by the example of the Macedonians, 7 by commendation of their former forwardnesse, 9 by the example of Christ, 14 and by the spirituall profit that shall redound to themselues thereby: 16 Commending to them the integritie and willingnesse of Titus, and those other brethren, who vpon his request, exhortation and commendation, were purposely come to them for this businesse.

MOreouer, brethren, wee do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the Churches of Macedonia,

2 How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their ioy, and their deepe pouertie, abounded vnto the riches of their liberalitie.

3 For to *their* power (I beare record)

yea, and beyond their power *they were* willing of themselues:

4 Praying vs with much entreatie, that we would receiue the gift, and take vpon vs the fellowship of the ministring to the Saints.

5 And this *they did*, not as we hoped, but first gaue their owne selues to the Lord, and vnto vs, by the will of God.

6 In so much that wee desired Titus, that as he had begun, so hee would also finish in you, the same grace also.

7 Therefore (as ye abound in euery thing, in faith, and vtterance, & knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue to vs) *see* that yee abound in this grace also.

8 I speake not by commandement, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to prooue the sinceritie of your loue.

9 For yee know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poore, that yee through his pouertie might be rich.

10 And herein I giue my aduice, for this is expedient for you, who haue begun before, not onely to doe, but also to be †forward a yeere agoe. †*Gr. willing.*

11 Now therefore performe the doing of it, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you haue.

12 For if there bee first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For *I meane* not that other men bee eased, and you burthened:

14 But by an equalitie: that now at this time your abundance may be *a supply* for their want, that their abundance also may be *a supply* for your want, that there may be equalitie,

15 As it is written, *Hee that had *gathered* much, had nothing ouer, and hee that had *gathered* little, had no lacke. *Exod. 16. 18.

16 But thankes bee to God which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And wee haue sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the Gospel, throughout all the Churches.

19 And not that onely, but who was also chosen of the Churches to trauaile

with

|| *Or, gift.*

with vs with this ||grace which is administred by vs to the glorie of the same Lord, and *declaration* of your readie minde.

20 Auoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this aboundance which is administred by vs.

21 Prouiding for honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

|| *Or, hee hath.*

22 And we haue sent with them our brother, whom wee haue often times proued diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, vpon the great confidence which ||I haue in you.

23 Whether *any doe enquire* of Titus; he is my partner and fellow helper concerning you: or our brethren *bee enquired of, they are* the messengers of the Churches, *and* the glorie of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the Churches, the proofe of your loue, & of our boasting on your behalfe.

CHAP. IX.

1 Hee yeeldeth the reason why, though hee knewe their forwardnesse, yet hee sent Titus and his brethren before hand. 6 And hee proceedeth in stirring them vp to a bountifull almes, as being but a kind of sowing of seed, 10 which shall returne a great increase to them, 13 and occasion a great sacrifice of thanksgiuings vnto God.

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for mee to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked very many.

3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, least our boasting of you should bee in vaine in this behalfe, that as I saide, yee may be readie.

4 Lest happily if they of Macedonia come with mee, & find you vnprepared, wee (that wee say not, you) should bee ashamed in this same confident boasting.

† *Gr. blessing*

|| *Or, which hath bene so much spoken of before.*

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before vnto you, and make vp before hand your †bountie, ||whereof yee had notice before, that the same might bee readie, as a matter of bountie, not of couetousnesse.

6 But this *I say*, Hee which soweth sparingly, shall reape sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reape bountifully.

7 Euerie man according as he purposeth in his heart, *so let him giue;* not grudgingly, or of necessitie: for *God loueth a cheerefull giuer. *Pro. 11. 25 rom. 12. 8. ecclu. 35. 9.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all things, may abound to euery good worke,

9 (As it is written: *Hee hath dispersed abroad: Hee hath giuen to the poore: his righteousnesse remaineth for euer. *Psa. 112. 9

10 Now he that *ministreth seede to the sower, both minister bread for your foode, and multiply your seede sowen, and encrease the fruites of your righteousnesse) *Esa. 55. 10

11 Being enriched in euery thing to al bountifulnes, which causeth through vs thankesgiuing to God.

12 For the administration of this seruice, not onely supplieth the want of the Saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgiuings vnto God,

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorifie God for your professed subiection vnto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution vnto them, and vnto all men:

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

CHAP. X.

Against the false Apostles, who disgraced the weaknesse of his person and bodily presence, he setteth out the spirituall might and authoritie, with which hee is armed against all aduersary powers, 7 assuring them that at his comming hee will bee found as mightie in word, as hee is now in writing beeing absent, 12 And withall taxing them for reaching out themselues beyond their compasse, and vanting thēselues into other mens labors.

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you, by the meekenes and gentlenesse of Christ, who ‖in presence am base among you, but being absent, am bold toward you: ‖*Or, in outward appearance.*

2 But I beseech you, that I may not bee bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I thinke to be

|| *Or, reckon.*

be bold against some, which ||thinke of vs as if wee walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walke in the flesh, we doe not warre after the flesh:

|| *Or, to God.*

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty ||through God to the pulling downe of strong holds.)

|| *Or, reasonings.*

5 Casting down ||imaginations, and euery high thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ:

6 And hauing in a readinesse to reuenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Doe ye looke on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himselfe, that he is Christs, let him of himselfe thinke this againe, that as he is Christs, euen so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority (which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seeme as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are waighty and powerfull, but *his* bodily presence is weake, and his speach contemptible.

11 Let such a one thinke this: that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be also* in deede when we are present.

|| *Or, vnderstand* it *not.*

12 For we dare not make our selues of the number, or compare our selues with some that commend themselues: but they measuring themselues by themselues, and comparing themselues amongst themselues, ||are not wise.

|| *Or, line.*

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the ||rule, which God hath distributed to vs, a measure to reach euen vnto you.

14 For we stretch not our selues beyond our measure as though wee reached not vnto you, for wee are come as farre as to you also, in *preaching* the Gospel of Christ.

|| *Or, magnified in you.*

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, *that is*, of other mens labours, but hauing hope, when your faith is increased, that wee shall bee ||enlarged by you, according to our rule abundantly.

16 To preach the Gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans ||line of things made ready to our hand. || *Or, rule.*

17 *But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. *Iere. 9. 24. 1. cor. 1. 31

18 For, not he that commendeth himselfe is approued, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

1 Out of his ielousie ouer the Corinthians, who seemed to make more account of the false apostles, then of him, he entreth into a forced commendation of himselfe, 5 of his equalitie with the chiefe Apostles, 7 of his preaching the Gospel to them freely, and without any their charge, 13 shewing that hee was not inferiour to those deceitfull workers, in any legall prerogatiue, 13 and in the seruice of Christ, and in all kind of sufferings for his ministery, farre superiour.

WOuld to God you could beare with mee a little in my folly, & in deede ||beare with me. || *Or, you do beare with me.*

2 For I am iealous ouer you with godly iealousie, for I haue espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I feare lest by any meanes, as the Serpent beguiled Eue through his subtilty, so your mindes should bee corrupted from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if he that commeth preacheth another Iesus whome wee haue not preached, or if yee receiue another spirit, which ye haue not receiued, or another Gospel, which ye haue not accepted, yee might well beare *with him.*

5 For, I suppose, I was not a whit behinde the very chiefest Apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speach, yet not in knowledge; but we haue bene throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence in abasing my selfe, that you might be exalted, because I haue preached to you the Gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them to doe you seruice.

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: For that which was lacking to mee, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in

all things

S I haue

I haue kept my selfe from being burthensome to you, and *so* will I keepe my selfe.

† *Gr. this boasting shal not be stopped in me.*

10 As the trueth of Christ is in mee, no man shall †stop mee of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that I wil doe, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may bee found euen as we.

13 For such are false Apostles, deceitfull workers, transforming themselues into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no marueile, for Sathan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also bee transformed as the ministers of righteousnesse, whose end shall be according to their workes.

16 I say againe, Let no man thinke mee a foole; if otherwise, yet as a foole ||receiue me, that I may boast my selfe a little.

|| *Or, suffer.*

17 That which I speake, I speake it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, seeing ye your selues are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning reproch, as though we had bene weake: howbeit, wherein soeuer any is bold, I speake foolishly, I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrewes? so *am* I: are they Israelites? so *am* I: are they the seed of Abraham? so *am* I:

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speake as a foole, I am more: in labors more abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prisons more frequent: in deaths oft.

*Deut. 25. 3.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I *forty *stripes* saue one.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned: thrice I suffered shipwracke: a night and a day I haue bene in the deepe.

26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by my owne countreymen, in perils by

the heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In wearinesse and painfulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger & thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednes.

28 Besides those things that are without, that which commeth vpon me dayly, the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needes glory, I will glory of the things which concerne mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the gouernour vnder Aretas the King, kept the citie with a garison, desirous to apprehend mee.

33 And through a window in a basket was I let downe, by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 For commending of his Apostleship, though he might glory of his wonderfull reuelations, 9 Yet hee rather chuseth to glory of his infirmities, 11 blaming them for forcing him to this vaine boasting. 14 Hee promiseth to come to them againe: but yet altogether in the affection of a father, 10 although hee feareth he shall to his griefe finde many offenders, and publike disorders there.

IT is not expedient for me, doubtlesse, to glory, I wil come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I knewe a man in Christ aboue foureteene yeeres agoe, whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth: such a one, caught vp to the third heauen.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth.)

4 How that he was caught vp into Paradise, and heard vnspeakeable wordes, which it is not ||lawfull for a man to vtter.

|| *Or, possible.*

5 Of such *a one* will I glory, yet of my selfe I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a foole: for I will say the trueth. But now I forbeare,

lest any man should thinke of me aboue *that* which hee seeth me *to bee*, or *that* hee heareth of me:

7 And least I should bee exalted aboue measure through the abundance of the reuelations, there was giuen to me a *thorne in the flesh, the messenger of Sathan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted aboue measure.

*See Ezek. 28. 24.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from mee.

9 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weaknes. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest vpon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I am become a foole in glorying, ye haue compelled me. For I ought to haue beene commended of you: for in nothing am I behinde the very chiefest Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truely the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and mightie deeds.

13 For what is it wherein yee were inferior to other Churches, except *it bee* that I my selfe was not burthensome to you? forgiue me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am readie to come to you, and I will not bee burthensome to you; for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I wil very gladly spend and bee spent for †you, though the more abundantly I loue you, the lesse I bee loued.

†*Gr. your soules.*

16 But be it so: I did not burthen you: neuerthelesse beeing craftie, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gaine of you by any of them, whom I sent vnto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gaine of you? Walked wee not in the same spirit? *walked wee* not in the same steps?

19 Againe, thinke you that we excuse our selues vnto you? wee speake before God in Christ: but *wee doe* all things,

dearely beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that I shall bee found vnto you such as ye would not, lest there bee debates, enuyings, wraths, strifes, backebitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults,

21 And least when I come againe, my God will humble mee among you, and that I shall bewaile many which haue sinned alreadie, and haue not repented of the vncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciuiousnesse which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He threatneth seueritie, and the power of his Apostleship against obstinate sinners. 5 And aduising them to a triall of their faith, 7 and to a reformation of their sinnes before his comming, 11 He concludeth his Epistle with a generall exhortation and a prayer.

THis is the third time I am comming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shal euery word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore haue sinned, and to all other, that if I come againe I will not spare:

3 Since ye seeke a proofe of Christ, speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weake, but is mightie in you.

4 For though hee was crucified through weaknesse, yet he liueth by the power of God: for wee also are weake ||in him, but wee shall liue with him by the power of God toward you.

|| *Or, with him.*

5 Examine your selues, whether ye be in the faith: proue your owne selues. Know yee not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that yee shall knowe that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God, that ye doe no euill, not that we should appeare approued, but that ye should doe yͭ which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For wee can doe nothing against the trueth, but for the trueth.

9 For wee are glad when wee are weake, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, euen your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present I should

vse sharpnesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Bee perfect, bee of good comfort, bee of one minde, liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace shalbe with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

¶ THE
Paul to

CHAP. I.

6 Hee wondereth that they haue so soone left him, and the Gospel, 8 And accurseth those that preach any other Gospel then hee did. 11 He learned the Gospel not of men, but of God: 14 And sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.

PAul an Apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him frō the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with mee, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace bee to you and peace, from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ,

4 Who gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God, and our Father,

5 To whom *bee* glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile, that you are so soone remoued from him, that called you into the grace of Christ, vnto an other Gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there bee some that trouble you, and would peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an Angel from heauen, preach *any other Gospel* vnto you, then that which wee haue preached vn-

13 All the Saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippos *a citie* of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

EPISTLE OF
the Galatians.

to you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach any other Gospel vnto you, then that yee haue receiued, let him be accursed.

10 For doe I now perswade men, or God? or doe I seeke to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not bee the seruant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither receiued it of man, neither was I taught *it*, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For yee haue heard of my couuersation in time past, in the Iewes Religion, *how* that beyond measure I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Iewes Religion, aboue many my †equals in mine owne nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace,

16 To reueale his sonne in mee, that I might preach him among the heathen, immediatly I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I vp to Ierusalem, to them which *were* Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned againe vnto Damascus.

18 Then after three yeeres, I ‖went vp to Ierusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes.

19 But other of the Apostles saw I none,

† *Gr. equals in yeeres.*

‖ *Or, returned.*

none, saue Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold, before God I lye not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia,

22 And was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ.

23 But they had heard onely, that he which persecuted vs in times past, now preacheth the faith, which once hee destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth when he went vp againe to Hierusalem, and for what purpose: 3 And that Titus was not circumcised: 11 And that he resisted Peter, and told him the reason, 14 why hee and other being Iewes, doe beleeue in Christ to bee Iustified by faith, and not by workes: 20 And that they liue not in sinne, who are so iustified.

THen fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Ierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus with me also.

2 And I went vp by reuelation, and communicated vnto them that Gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but ||priuately to them which were of reputation, lest by any meanes I should runne, or had runne in vaine.

|| *Or, seuerally.*

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greeke, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren vnawares brought in, who came in priuily to spie out our libertie, which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom wee gaue place by subiection, no not for an houre, that the trueth of the Gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to bee somewhat, (whatsoeuer they were, it maketh no matter to mee, God accepteth no mans person,) for they who seemed *to be somewhat*, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel of the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the Gospel of the circumcision was vnto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the cir-

cumcision, the same was mightie in me towards the Gentiles.)

9 And when Iames, Cephas and Iohn, who seemed to bee pillars, perceiued the grace that was giuen vnto me, they gaue to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that wee *should goe* vnto the heathen, and they vnto the circumcision.

10 Onely *they would* that wee should remember the poore, the same which I also was forward to doe.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he did eate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, hee withdrew, and separated himselfe, fearing them *which were* of the Circumcisiō.

13 And the other Iewes dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was caried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not vprightly according to the truth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before them al, If thou, being a Iew, liuest after the maner of Gentiles, and not as doe the Iewes, why compellest thou the Gentiles to liue as do the Iewes?

15 We *who are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not iustified by the works of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Law: for by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified.

17 But if while we seeke to be iustified by Christ, wee our selues also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the things which I destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through ẏ Law, am dead to the Law, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Neuertheles, I liue, yet not I, but Christ liueth in me, and the life which I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith of the sonne of God, who loued mee, and gaue himselfe for me.

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnes *come* by the Lawe, then Christ is dead in vaine.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moued them to leaue the faith, and hang vpon the Law? 6 They that beleeue are iustified, 9 & blessed with Abraham. 10 And this he sheweth by many reasons.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the trueth, before whose eyes Iesus Christ hath been euidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learne of you, receiued ye the spirit, by the works of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? hauing begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

|| *Or, so great*
4 Haue ye suffered ||so many things in vaine? if it be yet in vaine.

5 He therfore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

|| *Or, imputed.*
6 Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was ||accounted to him for righteousnesse.

7 Knowe yee therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the Scripture foreseeing that God would iustifie the heathen through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto
*Cen. 12. 3
Abraham, *saying*, *In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9 So then, they which bee of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the lawe, are vnder
*Deu. 27. 26.
the curse: for it is written, *Cursed is euery one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the Law to doe them.

11 But that no man is iustified by the Lawe in the sight of
*Abac. 2. 4. rom. 1. 17.
God, it is euident: for, *The iust shall liue by faith.

*Leui. 18. 5
12 And the Law is not of faith: but *the man that doeth them, shall liue in them.

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law,
*Deut. 21. 23.
being made a curse for vs: for it is written, *Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree:

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles, through Iesus Christ: that wee might receiue the promise of the Spirit through faith.

|| *Or, testament.*
15 Brethren, I speake after the maner of men: though it be but a mans ||co-

uenant, yet if it bee confirmed, no man disanulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many, but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the Couenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Lawe which was foure hundred and thirtie yeres after, cannot disanul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance bee of the Law, it is no more of promise: but God gaue it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whome the promise was made, *and it was* ordeyned by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a mediatour is not *a Mediatour* of one, but God is one.

21 Is the Lawe then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had beene a Lawe giuen which could haue giuen life, verily righteousnesse should haue bene by the Law.

22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by faith of Iesus Christ might be giuen to them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came, wee were kept vnder the Law, shut vp vnto the faith, which should afterwards bee reuealed.

24 Wherefore the Law was our Schoolemaster *to bring vs* vnto Christ, that we might be iustified by Faith.

25 But after that Faith is come, we are no longer vnder a Schoolemaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Iesus.

27 For as many of you as haue bene baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neither Iewe, nor Greeke, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if *yee be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heires according to the promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were vnder the Law till Christ came, as the heire is vnder his gardian till he be of age. 5 But Christ freed vs from the Law: 7 therefore we are seruants no longer to it. 14 He remembreth their good will to him, and his

to them, 22 and sheweth that wee are the sonnes of Abraham by the free woman.

NOw I say, that the heire, as long as hee is a child, differeth nothing from a seruant, though hee bee Lord of all,

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours vntill the time appointed of the father.

3 Euen so we, when wee were children, were in bondage vnder the ||Elements of the world:

|| *Or, rudiments.*

4 But when the fulnes of the time was come, God sent foorth his Sonne made of a woman, made vnder the Law,

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the Law, that we might receiue the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because yee are sonnes, God hath sent foorth the spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne; and if a sonne, then an heire of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, yee did seruice vnto them which by nature are no Gods.

9 But now after that yee haue knowen God, or rather are knowen of God, how turne ye ||againe to the weak and beggerly ||Elements, whereunto ye desire againe to be in bondage?

|| *Or, backe.*

|| *Or, rudiments.*

10 Yee obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am afraide of you, lest I haue bestowed vpon you labour in vaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I *am;* for I *am* as ye are, ye haue not iniured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmitie of the flesh, I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor reiected, but receiued mee as an Angel of God, *euen* as Christ Iesus.

15 ||Where is then the blessednes you spake of? for I beare you record, that if it had bin possible, ye would haue plucked out your own eyes, and haue giuen them to me.

|| *Or, what was then?*

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the trueth?

17 They zelously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude ||you, that you might affect them.

|| *Or, vs.*

18 But it is good to bee zealously af-

fected alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you.

19 My litle children, of whom I trauaile in birth againe, vntill Christ bee formed in you:

20 I desire to bee present with you now, and to change my voyce, for I ||stand in doubt of you.

|| *Or, I am perplexed for you.*

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be vnder the Law, doe ye not heare the Law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman.

23 But he who was of the bondwoman, was borne after the flesh: but hee of the freewoman, *was* by promise.

24 Which things are an Allegorie; for these are the two ||Couenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

|| *Or, testaments.*

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and ||answereth to Ierusalem, which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

|| *Or, is in the same ranke with.*

26 But Ierusalem which is aboue is free, which is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written, *Reioyce thou barren that bearest not, breake foorth and cry thou that traueilest not; for the desolate hath many moe children then she which hath an husband.

*Esay 54. 1

28 Now wee, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then hee that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was *borne* after the Spirit, euen so it is now.

30 Neuerthelesse, what saith the Scripture? *Cast out the bondwoman and her sonne: for the son of the bondwoman shall not bee heire with the son of the freewoman.

*Gen. 21. 10.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 Hee mooueth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to obserue circumcision: 13 but rather loue, which is the summe of the Law. 19 He reckoneth vp the workes of the flesh, 22 and the fruits of the spirit, 25 and exhorteth to walke in the spirit.

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and bee not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 Beholde, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shal profite you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to doe the whole Law.

4 Christ is become of no effect vnto you, whosoeuer of you are iustified by the Law: ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the spirit waite for the hope of righteousnesse by faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ, neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

|| *Or, who did driue you backe?*

7 Ye did run well; ||who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the trueth?

8 This perswasion commeth not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe.

10 I haue confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded; but he that troubleth you, shall beare *his* iudgement, whosoeuer hee be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were euen cut off which trouble you.

13 For brethren, ye haue beene called vnto liberty, onely *vse* not libertie for an occasion to the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

*Leu. 19. 18 mat. 22. 39.

14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, *euen* in this: *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

15 But if yee bite and deuoure one another, take heed ye be not consumed one of another.

|| *Or, fulfill not.*

16 This I say then, Walke in the spirit, and ||ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that yee cannot doe the things that yee would.

18 But if yee be lead of the spirit, yee are not vnder the Law.

19 Nowe the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, adulterie, fornication, vncleannesse, lasciuiousnesse,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Enuyings, murthers, drunkennesse, reuellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I haue

also tolde you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherite the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the spirit is loue, ioy, peace, longsuffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith,

23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh with the ||affections and lustes. || *Or, passions*

25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.

26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 He moueth them to deale mildly with a brother that hath slipped, 2 and to beare one anothers burden. 6 To bee liberall to their teachers, 9 and not wearie of well doing. 12 He sheweth what they intend that preach circumcision. 14 He glorieth in nothing, saue in the Crosse of Christ.

BRethren, ||if a man bee ouertaken in a fault: yee which are spirituall, restore such a one in the spirit of meeknesse, considering thy selfe least thou also be tempted. || *Or, although.*

2 Beare ye one anothers burthens, and so fulfill the Law of Christ.

3 For if a man thinke himselfe to be some thing, when he is nothing, hee deceiueth himselfe.

4 But let euery man prooue his owne worke, and then shall he haue reioycing in him selfe alone, and not in an other.

5 For euery man shall beare his owne burthen.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate vnto him that teacheth, in all good things.

7 Be not deceiued, God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting.

9 And let vs not bee weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.

10 As we haue therefore opportunitie, let vs doe good vnto all men, especially vnto them who are of the household of faith.

11 Yee

11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be Circumcised: onely least they should suffer persecution for the Crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselues who are circumcised, keepe the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory, saue in the Crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, ||by whom the world is

|| *Or, whereby.*

¶ THE EPISTLE
the Apostle to

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 3 and thankesgiuing for the Ephesians, 4 he treateth of our Election, 6 and Adoption by grace, 11 which is the true and proper fountaine of mans saluation. 13 And because the height of this mysterie cannot easily be atteined vnto, 16 he praieth that they may come 18 to the full knowledge, and 20 possession thereof in Christ.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saincts which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus.

2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, who hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessings in heauenly ||places in Christ:

|| *Or, things.*

4 According as he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that wee should bee holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Hauing predestinated vs vnto the adoption of children by Iesus Christ to

crucified vnto me, & I vnto the world.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercie, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble mee, for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians, written from Rome.

OF PAVL

the Ephesians.

himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherein he hath made vs accepted in the beloued:

7 In whom wee haue redemption through his blood, the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to the riches of his grace,

8 Wherein hee hath abounded toward vs in all wisedome and prudence:

9 Hauing made knowen vnto vs the mysterie of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in himselse,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in †heauen, and which are on earth, euen in him: †*Gr. the heauens.*

11 In whom also we haue obteined an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glorie, who first ||trusted in Christ. ||*Or, hoped.*

13 In whom ye also *trusted*, after that ye heard the word of trueth, the Gospel of your saluation: in whom also after that yee beleeued, yee were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, vntill the redemption of the purchased possession, vnto the praise of his glorie.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the Saints,

16 Cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ the Father of glorie, may giue vnto you the Spirit of wisedome and reuelation ||in the knowledge of him:

|| *Or, for the acknowledgment.*

18 The eyes of your vnderstanding being inlightned: that yee may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glorie of his inheritance in the Saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to vsward who beleeue, according to the working †of his mightie power:

† *Gr. of the might of his power.*

20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his owne right hand in the heauenly *places*,

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and euery name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things vnder his feete, and gaue him to be the head ouer all things to the Church,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 By comparing what we were by 3 nature, with what we are 5 by grace: 10 He declareth, that wee are made for good workes; and 13 beeing brought neere by Christ, should not liue as 11 Gentiles, and 12 forreiners in time past, but as 19 citizens with the Saints, and the family of God.

AND you *hath hee quickned* who were dead in trespasses, and sinnes,

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the aire, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom also we all had our conuersation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling †the desires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by

† *Gr. the wills.*

nature the children of wrath, euen as others:

4 But God who is rich in mercie, for his great loue wherewith hee loued vs,

5 Euen when wee were dead in sinnes, hath quickned vs together with Christ, (by grace ye are saued)

6 And hath raised *vs* vp together, and made *vs* sit together in heauenly places in Christ Iesus:

7 That in the ages to come, hee might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in *his* kindenesse towards vs, through Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are ye saued, through faith, and that not of your selues: *it is* the gift of God:

9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast.

10 For wee are his workemanship, created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath before ||ordeined, that we should walke in them.

|| *Or, prepared.*

11 Wherefore remember that ye *being* in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called vncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands,

12 That at that time yee were without Christ, being aliens from the common wealth of Israel, and strangers from the couenants of promise, hauing no hope, & without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For hee is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition betweene vs:

15 Hauing abolished in his flesh the enmitie, *euen* the Lawe of Commandements *conteined* in Ordinances, for to make in himselfe, of twaine, one newe man, so making peace.

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by the crosse, hauing slaine the enmitie ||thereby,

|| *Or, in himselfe.*

17 And came, and preached peace to you, *which were* afarre off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him wee both haue an accesse by one Spirit vnto the Father.

19 Now therefore yee are no more strangers and forreiners; but fellow citizens with the Saints, and of the houshold of God,

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord:

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God thorow the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mysterie, 6 that the Gentiles should be saued, 3 was made knowen to Paul by reuelation: 8 And to him was that grace giuen, that 9 he should preach it. 13 He desireth them not to faint for his tribulation, 14 and praieth, 19 that they may perceiue the great loue of Christ toward them.

FOr this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If ye haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youward:

3 How that by reuelation hee made knowen vnto me the mysterie, (as I wrote ||afore in few words,

|| *Or, a little before.*

4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may vnderstand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ.)

5 Which in other ages was not made knowen vnto the sonnes of men, as it is now reueiled vnto his holy Apostles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heires, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the Gospel:

7 Whereof I was made a Minister, according to the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee, by the effectuall working of his power.

8 Vnto mee, who am lesse then the least of all Saints, is this grace giuen, that I should preach among the Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ,

9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mysterie, which from the beginning of the world, hath bene hid in God, who created all things by Iesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now vnto the principalities and powers in heauenly places, might be knowen by the church, the manifold wisedome of God,

11 According to the eternall pur-

pose which he purposed in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 In whom we haue boldnesse and accesse, with confidence, by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that yee faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heauen and earth is named,

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to bee strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that yee being rooted and grounded in loue,

18 May be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to know the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that yee might bee filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now vnto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly aboue all that wee aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 Vnto him be glory in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to vnitie, 7 and declareth that God therefore giueth diuers 11 gifts vnto men, that his Church might be 13 edified, and 16 growen vp in Christ. 18 He calleth them from the impuritie of the Gentiles. 24 To put on the new man. 25 To cast of lying, and 29 corrupt communication.

I Therefore the prisoner ||of the Lord, beseech you that yee walke worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

|| *Or, in the Lord.*

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long suffering, forbearing one another in loue.

3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 *There is* one body, and one spirit, euen as yee are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God and Father of all, who is aboue all, & through all, & in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

*Psal. 68. 18.
|| Or, a multitude of captiues.

8 Wherefore he saith: *When he ascended vp on high, he led ||captiuitie captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that hee also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

|| Or, fulfill.
*1. Cor. 12. 28.

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended vp far aboue all heauens, that he might ||fill all things.)

11 *And he gaue some, Apostles: and some, Prophets: and some, Euangelists: and some, Pastors, and teachers:

12 For the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the ministerie, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

|| Or, into the vnitie.
|| Or, age.

13 Till we all come ||in the vnitie of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Sonne of God, vnto a perfect man, vnto the measure of the ||stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

14 That we hencefoorth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and caried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftinesse, whereby they lye in waite to deceiue:

|| Or, being sincere.

15 But ||speaking the trueth in loue, may grow vp into him in all things which is the head, *euen* Christ:

*Col. 2. 19.

16 *From whom the whole body fitly ioyned together, and compacted by that which euery ioynt supplyeth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of euery part, maketh increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that yee henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke in the vanitie of their minde,

*Rom. 1. 21
|| Or, hardnesse.

18 Hauing the vnderstanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the *||blindnesse of their heart:

19 Who being past feeling, haue giuen themselues ouer vnto lasciuiousnesse, to worke all vncleannesse with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye haue heard him, and haue bene taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus,

22 That yee put off concerning the

former conuersation, the olde man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And bee renewed in the spirit of your minde:

24 And that yee put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousnesse, and ||true holinesse.

|| *Or, holines of trueth.*

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speake euery man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry and sinne not, let not the Sunne go down vpon your wrath:

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* handes the thing which is good, that he may haue ||to giue to him that needeth.

|| *Or, to distribute.*

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouth, but that which is good ||to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

|| *Or, to edifie profitably.*

30 And grieue not the holy Sririt of God, whereby yee are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternes, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and euill speaking, be put away from you, with all malice,

32 *And bee ye kinde one to another. tender hearted, forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christs sake hath forgiuen you.

*2. Cor. 2. 10.

CHAP. V.

2 After generall exhortations, to loue, 3 to flie fornication, 4 and all vncleannesse, 7 not to conuerse with the wicked, 15 to walke warily, and to be 18 filled with the spirit, 22 he descendeth to the particular dueties, how wiues ought to obey their husbands, 25 and husbands ought to loue their wiues, 32 euen as Christ doth his Church.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as deare children.

2 And walke in loue, as Christ also hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling sauour;

3 But fornication and all vncleannesse, or couetousnesse, let it not be once named amongst you, as becommeth Saints:

4 Neither filthinesse, nor foolish

talking, nor iesting, which are not conuenient: but rather giuing of thankes.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor vncleane person, nor couetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for because of these things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of ||disobedience.

|| *Or, vnbeliefe.*

7 Bee not yee therefore partakers with them.

8 For yee were sometimes darkenesse, but now *are yee* light in the Lord: walke as children of light,

9 (For the fruite of the spirit is in all goodnesse and righteousnesse & trueth.)

10 Proouing what is acceptable vnto the Lord:

11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darkenesse, but rather reproue them.

12 For it is a shame euen to speake of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are ||reprooued, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoeuer doth make manifest, is light.

|| *Or, discouered.*

14 Wherfore hee saith: *Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.

*Esai. 60. 1.

15 *See then that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise,

*Col. 4. 5.

16 Redeming the time, because the dayes are euill.

17 Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but vnderstanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And bee not drunke with wine, wherein is excesse: but bee filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selues, in Psalmes, and Hymnes, and Spirituall songs, singing and making melodie in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, and the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.

22 Wiues, submit your selues vnto your own husbands, as vnto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, euen as Christ is the head of the Church: and he is the sauiour of the body.

24 Therefore as the Church is sub-

iect vnto Christ, so let the wiues *bee* to their owne husbands in euery thing.

25 Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ also loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it:

26 That he might sanctifie & cleanse *it* with the washing of water, by the word,

27 That hee might present it to himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinckle, or any such thing: but that it should bee holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: hee that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord the Church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leaue his father and mother, and shall be ioyned vnto his wife, and they two shalbe one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speake concerning Christ and the Church.

33 Neuerthelesse, let euery one of you in particular, so loue his wife euen as himselfe, and the wife *see* that she reuerence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The duetie of children towards their parents, 5 Of seruants towards their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare, 12 Not onely against flesh and blood, but also spiritual enemies. 13 The complete armor of a Christian, 18 and how it ought to be vsed. 21 Tychicus is cōmended.

CHildren, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandement with promise,)

3 That it may bee well with thee, and thou maiest liue long on the earth.

4 And *yee* fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in the nourture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Seruants, bee obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as vnto Christ:

6 Not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart:

7 With good will doing seruice, as to the Lord, and not to men,

8 Knowing that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, do the same things vnto them, ||forbearing threatning: knowing that ||your master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of persons with him.

|| *Or, moderating.*
|| Some reade, *both your, and their master.*

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, & in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the deuill.

12 For wee wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darknes of this world, against ||spirituall wickednes in ||high places.

13 Wherfore take vnto you the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to withstand in the euill day, and ||hauing done all, to stand.

|| *Or, wicked spirits.*
|| *Or, heauenly.*
|| *Or, hauing ouercome all.*

14 Stand therefore, hauing your loynes girt about with trueth, and hauing on the breast-plate of righteousnesse:

15 And your feete shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 Aboue all, taking the shielde of Faith, wherewith yee

shall bee able to

quench all the fierie dartes of the wicked.
17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:
18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseuerance, and supplication for all Saints,
19 And for mee, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make knowen the mysterie of the Gospel:
20 For which I am an ambassador ||in bonds, that ||therein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.
21 But that yee also may know my affaires, *and* how I doe, Tychicus a beloued brother, and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make knowen to you all things.
22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that yee might know our affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.
23 Peace *be* to the brethren, and loue, with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.
24 Grace be with all them that loue our Lord Iesus Christ ||in sinceritie.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

|| *Or, in a chaine.*
|| *Or, thereof.*
|| *Or, with incorruption.*

¶ THE

¶THE EPISTLE
the Apostle to

CHAP. I.

3 He testifieth his thankefulnesse to God, and his loue toward them, for the fruits of their faith and fellowship, in his sufferings, 9 dayly praying to him for their increase in grace: 12 Hee sheweth what good the faith of Christ had receiued by his troubles at Rome, 21 and how ready he is to glorifie Christ either by his life or death, 27 exhorting them to vnitie, 28 and to fortitude in persecution.

PAul and Timotheus the seruants of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus, which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:

2 Grace *be* vnto you, and peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God vpon euery ||remembrance of you,

|| *Or, mention.*

4 Alwayes in euery prayer of mine for you all making request, with ioy

5 For your felowship in the Gospel from the first day vntill now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, ||will performe it vntil the day of Iesus Christ:

|| *Or, will finish it.*

7 Euen as it is meete for mee to thinke this of you all, because I ||haue you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the Gospel, ye all are ||partakers of my grace.

|| *Or, you haue me in your heart.*
|| *Or, partakers with me of grace.*

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound yet more & more in knowledge, and in all ||iudgment.

|| *Or, sence.*

10 That ye may ||approue things that

|| *Or, trie.*

||are excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ.

|| *Or, differ.*

11 Being filled with the fruites of righteousnesse, which *are* by Iesus Christ vnto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would yee should vnderstand brethren, that the things which happened vnto mee, haue fallen out rather vnto the furtherance of the Gospel.

13 So that my bonds ||in Christ, are manifest in all the ||palace, and in ||all other *places.*

|| *Or, for Christ.*
|| *Or, Cæsars Court.*
|| *Or, to all others.*

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident, by my bonds, are much more bold to speake the word without feare.

15 Some in deed preach Christ, euen of enuie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not syncerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? Notwithstanding euery way, whether in pretence, or in trueth: Christ is preached, and I therein doe reioyce, yea, and will reioyce.

19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and the supplie of the spirit of Iesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed: but that with all boldnes, as alwayes, *so* now also Christ shal be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to liue is Christ, and to die is gaine.

22 But if I liue in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shal chuse, I wote not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, hauing a desire to depart, & to bee with Christ, which is farre better.

24 Neuertheles, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needfull for you.

25 And hauing this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioy of faith,

26 That your reioycing may bee more abundant in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Onely let your conuersation bee as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may heare of your affaires, that yee stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striuing together for the faith of the Gospel,

28 And in nothing terrified by your aduersaries, which is to them an euident token of perdition: but to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen in the behalfe of Christ, not onely to beleeue on him, but also to suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

He exhorteth them to vnitie, and to all humblenesse of minde, by the example of Christs humilitie and exaltation: 12 To a carefull proceeding in the way of saluation, that they bee as lights to the wicked world, 16 and comforts to him their Apostle, who is now ready to bee offered vp to God. 19 He hopeth to send Timothie to them, whom hee greatly commendeth, 25 as Epaphroditus also, whom he presently sendeth to them.

IF *there bee* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels, & mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my ioy, that yee be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, of one minde.

3 Let nothing bee *done* through strife, or vaine glory, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteeme other better then themselues.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde bee in you, which was also in Christ Iesus:

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it not robbery to bee equall with God:

7 But made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke vpon him

the forme of

a seruant, and was made in the ||likenesse of men.

|| *Or, habite.*

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto death, euen the death of the Crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name which is aboue euery name:

10 That at the Name of Iesus euery knee should bow, of *things* in heauen, and *things* in earth, and *things* vnder the earth:

11 And that euery tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore, my beloued, as yee haue alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; worke out your owne saluation with feare, and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will, and to doe, of *his* good pleasure.

14 Doe all things without murmurings, and disputings:

15 That yee may bee blamelesse and ||harmelesse, the sonnes of God, without rebuke, in the middes of a crooked and peruerse nation, among whom ||ye shine as lights in the world:

|| *Or, syncere.*

|| *Or, shine ye*

16 Holding foorth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and if I bee †offered vpon the sacrifice and seruice of your faith, I ioy, and reioyce with you all.

† *Gr. powred foorth.*

18 For the same cause also doe ye ioy, and reioyce with me.

19 ||But I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may bee of good comfort, when I know your state.

|| *Or, moreouer.*

20 For I haue no man ||like minded, who will naturally care for your state.

|| *Or, so deare vnto mee.*

21 For all seeke their owne, not the things which are Iesus Christs.

22 But ye know the proofe of him, That as a sonne with the father, hee hath serued with me, in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soone as I shall see how it wil goe with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary, to send to you Epaphroditus my brother and companion in labour, and fellow souldiour,

sonldiour, but your messenger, and hee that ministred to my wants.

26 For hee longed after you all, and was full of heauinesse, because that yee had heard that he had bene sicke.

27 For indeed he was sicke nigh vnto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on mee also, lest I should haue sorow vpon sorow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him againe, ye may reioyce, and that I may bee the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receiue him therfore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and ‖hold such in reputation:

‖ *Or, honor such.*

30 Because for the worke of Christ he was nigh vnto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lacke of seruice toward me.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee warneth them to beware of the false teachers of the Circumcision, 4 shewing that himself hath greater cause then they, to trust in the righteousnesse of the Law: 7 which notwithstanding hee counteth as doung and losse, to gaine Christ and his righteousnesse, 12 therein acknowledging his owne imperfection. 15 Hee exhorteth them to be thus minded, 17 and to imitate him, 18 and to decline the waies of carnall Christians.

FInally, my brethren, reioyce in the Lorde. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grieuous: but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of euill workers: beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that hee hath whereof hee might trust in the flesh, I more:

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stocke of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes, as touching the Law, a Pharise:

6 Concerning zeale, persecuting the Church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, blamelesse.

7 But what things were gaine to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellencie of the

knowledge of Christ Iesus my Lord: for whom I haue suffered the losse of all things, and doe count them but doung, that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not hauing mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe to haue apprehended: but this one thing *I doe*, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth vnto those things which are before,

14 I presse toward the marke, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore, as many as bee perfect, bee thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shal reueale euen this vnto you.

16 Neuerthelesse, whereto wee haue alreadie attained, let vs walke by the same rule, let vs minde the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and marke them which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 (For many walke, of whome I haue told you often, and now tell you euen weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is* their belly, and whose glorie is in their shame, who minde earthly things.)

20 For our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the Sauiour, the Lord Iesus Christ:

21 Who shall change our vile bodie, that it may bee fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 From particular admonitions 4 hee proceedeth to generall exhortations, 10 shewing how hee reioyced at their liberalitie to-

wards him lying in prison, not so much for the supply of his owne wants, as for the grace of God in them. 19 And so he concludeth with prayer and salutations.

THerefore, my brethren, dearely beloued and longed for, my ioy and crowne, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearely beloued.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, helpe those women which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow labourers, whose names are in the booke of life.

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway: and againe I say, Reioyce.

5 Let your moderation be knowen vnto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Bee carefull for nothing: but in euery thing by prayer and supplication with thankesgiuing, let your request be made knowen vnto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall keepe your hearts & minds through Christ Iesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoeuer things *are* true, whatsoeuer things *are* ||honest, whatsoeuer things *are* iust, whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer things *are* louely, whatsoeuer things *are* of good report: if there bee any vertue, and if there bee any praise, thinke on these things:

|| *Or, venerable.*

9 Those things which ye haue both learned and receiued, and heard, and seene in mee, doe: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I reioyced in the Lorde greatly, that now at the last your care of me ||hath flourished againe, wherein yee were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

|| *Or, is reuiued.*

11 Not that I speake in respect of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to bee content.

12 I know both how to bee abased, and I knowe how to abound: euerie where, and in all things I am instructed, both to bee full, and to bee hungrie, both to abound, and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, yee haue well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with mee, as concerning giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and againe vnto my necessitie.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But ||I haue all, and abound. I am full, hauing receiued of Epaphroditus the things *which were sent* from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

|| *Or, I haue receiued all.*

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Iesus.

20 Now vnto God and our Father *be* glory for euer and euer. Amen.

21 Salute euery Saint in Christ Iesus: the brethren which are with me, greet you.

22 All the Saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars houshold.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

¶ THE

¶ THE EPISTLE

the Apostle to

CHAP. I.

1 After salutation hee thanketh God for their faith, 7 confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras, 9 Praieth further for their increase in grace, 14 describeth the true Christ, 21 encourageth them to receiue Iesus Christ, and commendeth his owne ministery.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by yͤ will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To the saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace be vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We giue thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, praying alwayes for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of the loue which yee haue to all the Saints,

5 For the hope which is layd vp for you in heauen, whereof ye heard before in the word of the trueth of the Gospel,

6 Which is come vnto you as *it is* in all the world, and bringeth foorth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day yee heard *of it*, and knew the grace of God in trueth,

7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare felow seruant, who is for you a faithfull Minister of Christ:

8 Who also declared vnto vs your loue in the spirit.

9 For this cause wee also, since the day we heard it, doe not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisedome and spirituall vnderstanding:

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord vnto all pleasing, being fruit-

OF PAVL
the Colossians.

full in euery good worke, & increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, vnto all patience and long suffering with ioyfulnesse:

12 Giuing thanks vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light:

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenesse, and hath translated *vs* into the kingdome of †his deare Sonne, † *Gr. the Sonne of his loue.*

14 In whom we haue redemption through his blood, *euen* the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of euery creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heauen, and that are in earth, visible and inuisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 *And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. * 1. Cor. 8. 6 ioh. 1. 3.

18 And hee is the head of the body, the Church: who is the beginning, the first borne from the dead, that ‖in all things he might haue the preeminence: ‖ *Or, among all.*

19 For it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulnesse dwell,

20 And (‖hauing made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things vnto himself, by him, *I say*, whether they bee things in earth, or things in heauen. ‖ *Or, making peace.*

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies ‖in your minde by wicked workes, yet now hath hee reconciled, ‖ *Or, by your mind in wicked works.*

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy & vnblameable, and vnreprooueable in his sight,

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and setled, and be not moued away
from

from the hope of the Gospel, which yee haue heard, *and* which was preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made a Minister.

24 Who now reioyce in my sufferings for you, and fill vp that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am made a Minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen to mee for you, ||to fulfill the word of God:

|| *Or, fully to preach the word of God,* *Rom.* 1. 19.

26 *Euen* the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints,

27 To whom God would make knowen what is the riches of the glory of this mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ ||in you, the hope of glory:

|| *Or, amongst you.*

28 Whom we preach, warning euery man, and teaching euery man in all wisedome, that we may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striuing according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee still exhorteth them to bee constant in Christ, 8 To beware of Philosophie, and vaine traditions, 18 worshipping of Angels, 20 and Legall Ceremonies, which are ended in Christ.

FOr I would that ye knew what great ||conflict I haue for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my face in the flesh:

|| *Or, feare or care.*

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in loue, and vnto all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to the acknowledgement of the mysterie of God, and of the Father, and of Christ,

3 ||In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome, and knowledge.

|| *Or, wherein.*

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with entising words.

5 For though I bee absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, ioying and beholding your order, and the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As yee haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, *so* walke yee in him:

7 Rooted and built vp in him, and stablished in the faith, as yee haue bene taught, abounding therein with thankesgiuing.

8 Beware lest any man spoile you through Philosophie and vaine deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ||rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:

|| *Or, elements.*

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie, & power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the Circumcision made without handes, in putting off the body of the sinnes of the flesh, by the Circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein also you are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sinnes, and the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath hee quickened together with him, hauing forgiuen you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances, that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, and tooke it out of the way, nayling it to his Crosse:

15 And hauing spoyled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing ouer them ||in it.

|| *Or, in himselfe.*

16 Let no man therefore iudge you in ||meat, or in drinke, or in ||respect of an Holy day, or of the New moone, or of the Sabbath *dayes:*

|| *Or, for eating and drinking.*

|| *Or, in part.*

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body *is* of Christ.

18 Let no man ||beguile you of your reward, †in a voluntary humilitie, and worshipping of Angels, intruding into those things which hee hath not seene, vainely puft vp by his fleshly minde:

|| *Or, iudge against you.*

† *Gr. being a voluntary in humilitie.*

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by ioynts and bands hauing nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if yee bee dead with Christ frō the ||rudiments of the world: why, as though liuing in the world, are ye subiect to ordinances?

|| *Or, elements.*

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the vsing) after the commandements and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue in deed a shew

of wisedome in will-worship and humilitie, and ||neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

|| *Or, punishing, or not sparing.*

CHAP. III.

1 Hee sheweth where wee should seeke Christ. 5 Hee exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the olde man, and to put on Christ, 12 exhorting to charitie, humilitie, and other seuerall dueties.

IF yee then bee risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God:

2 Set your ||affection on things aboue, not on things on the earth.

|| *Or, minde.*

3 For yee are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appeare, then shall yee also appeare with him in glorie.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vpon the earth: fornication, vncleannesse, inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse, which is idolatrie:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience,

7 In the which yee also walked sometime, when ye liued in them.

8 But now you also put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemie, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yee haue put off the old man with his deedes:

10 And haue put on the new man, which is renued in knowledge, after the image of him that created him,

11 Where there is neither Greeke, nor Iew, circumcision, nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloued) bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse of minde, meekenesse, long suffering,

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a ||quarrell against any: euen as Christ forgaue you, so also *doe* yee.

|| *Or, complaint.*

14 And aboue all these things *put on* charitie, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also yee are

called in one body: and be yee thankefull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdome, teaching and admonishing one another in Psalmes, and Hymnes, and Spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoeuer yee doe in word or deed, *doe* all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God and the Father, by him.

18 Wiues, submit your selues vnto your owne husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children *to anger*, lest they be discouraged.

22 Seruants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh: not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoeuer yee doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not vnto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong which hee hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Hee exhorteth them to bee feruent in prayer, 5 to walke wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ. 10 Hee saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperitie.

MAsters, giue vnto your seruants that which is iust and equall, knowing that yee also haue a Master in heauen.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thankesgiuing:

3 Withall, praying also for vs, that God would open vnto vs a doore of vtterance, to speake the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speake.

5 Walke in wisdome toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech bee alway with

grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how yee ought to answere euery man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare vnto you, *who is* a beloued brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord:

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that hee might know your estate, and comfort your hearts.

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloued brother, who is one of you. They shall make knowen vnto you all things which *are* done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas, (touching whome yee receiued commandements; if he come vnto you, receiue him:)

11 And Iesus, which is called Iustus, who are of the circumcision. These onely are my fellow workers vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene a comfort vnto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a seruant of Christ, saluteth you, alwaies ||labouring feruently for you in praiers,

|| *Or, striuing*

¶ THE FIRST
Paul the Apostle to

CHAP. I.

1 The Thessalonians are giuen to vnderstand both how mindfull of them S. Paul was at all times in thanks-giuing, & prayer: 5 and also how well he was perswaded of the truth, and sinceritie of their faith, & conuersion to God.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: grace *be* vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue thankes to God alwaies

that ye may stand perfect, and ||complete in all the will of God. *|| Or, fillea.*

13 For I beare him record, that hee hath a great zeale for you, and them *that are* in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloued physician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, & the church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise reade the Epistle from Laodicea,

17 And say to Archippus, Take heede to the ministerie, which thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

EPISTLE OF
the Thessalonians.

for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your worke of faith, and labour of loue, and patience of hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren ||beloued, your election of God. *|| Or, beloued of God: your election.*

5 For our Gospel came not vnto you in word onely: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as yee know what maner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And yee became followers of vs, and of the Lord, hauing receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the Word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia & Achaia, but also in euery place your faith to Godward is spred abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of vs, what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how yee turned to God from idols, to serue the liuing, and true God,

10 And to waite for his sonne from heauen, whom he raised from the dead, *euen* Iesus which deliuered vs from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

In what manner the Gospel was brought and preached to the Thessalonians, and in what sort also they receiued it. 18 A reason is rendred both why Saint Paul was so long absent from them, and also why hee was so desirous to see them.

FOr your selues, brethren, knowe our entrance in vnto you, that it was not in vaine.

2 But euen after that wee had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, wee were bold in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceite, nor of vncleannesse, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to bee put in trust with the Gospel, euen so wee speake, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time vsed wee flattering wordes, as yee knowe, nor a cloke of couetousnesse, God *is* witnesse:

6 Nor of men sought we glorie, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might haue beene ||burdensome, as the Apostles of Christ.

|| *Or, vsed authority.*

7 But wee were gentle among you, euen as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to haue imparted vnto you, not the Gospel of God only, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

9 For yee remember, brethren, our labour and trauaile: for labourng night and day, because wee would not bee chargeable vnto any of you, wee preached vnto you the Gospel of God.

10 Yee *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, and iustly, and vnblameably wee behaued our selues among you that beleeue.

11 As you know, how wee exhorted and comforted, and charged euery one of you, (as a father doeth his children,)

12 That ye would walke worthy of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause also thanke wee God without ceasing, because when yee receiued the word of God, which yee heard of vs, yee receiued it not as the word of men, but (as it is in trueth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeue.

14 For yee, brethren, became followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus: for ye also haue suffered like things of your owne countreymen, euen as they haue of the Iewes:

15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus, and their owne Prophets, and haue ||persecuted vs: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

|| *Or, chased vs out.*

16 Forbidding vs to speake to the Gentiles, that they might bee saued, to fill vp their sinnes alway: for the wrath is come vpon them to the vttermost.

17 But wee, brethren, beeing taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeuored the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would haue come vnto you (euen I Paul) once & againe: but Satan hindered vs.

19 For what is our hope, or ioy, or crowne of ||reioycing? Are not euen ye in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his comming?

|| *Or, glorying*

20 For, ye are our glory and ioy.

CHAP. III.

1 S. Paul testifieth his great loue to the Thessalonians, partly by sending Timothie vnto them to strengthen and comfort them: partly by reioycing in their weldoing: 10 and partly by praying for them, and desiring a safe comming vnto them.

WHerefore when wee could no longer forbeare, wee thought it good to bee left at Athens alone:

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow labourer in the Gospel of

Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should be mooued by these afflictions: for your selues know that we are appointed therunto.

4 For verily when wee were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation, euen as it came to passe and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbeare, I sent to know your faith, lest by some meanes the tempter haue tempted you, and our labor be in vaine.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and charitie, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring greatly to see vs, as we also *to see* you:

7 Therefore brethren, wee were comforted ouer you in all our affliction and distresse, by your faith:

*Rom. 7. 9. 8 For now we *liue, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can we render to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith wee ioy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night & day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himselfe and our Father, and our Lord Iesus Christ ||direct our way vnto you. || *Or, guide.*

12 And the Lorde make you to increase, & abound in loue one towards another, and towards all men, euen as we *doe* towards you:

13 To the end hee may stablish your hearts vnblameable in holinesse before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

CHAP. IIII.

Hee exhorteth them to goe on forward in all manner of godlinesse, 6 to liue holily and iustly, 9 to loue one another, 11 and quietly to followe their owne businesse: 13 and last of all to sorrow moderately for the dead. 17 And vnto this last exhortation is annexed a briefe description of the resurrection, and second comming of Christ to iudgement.

|| *Or, request* || *Or, beseech*

FVrthermore then we ||beseech you, brethren, and ||exhort you by the Lord Iesus, that as yee haue receiued of vs, how ye ought to walke, and to please God, so yee would abound more and more.

2 For yee know what commandements wee gaue you, by the Lord Iesus.

3 For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, that yee should absteine from fornication:

4 That euery one of you should know how to possesse his vessell in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That *no man* goe beyond and ‖defraud his brother ‖in *any* matter, because that the Lord is the auenger of all such; as we also haue forewarned you, and testified:

‖ *Or, oppresse, or, ouer-reach.*

‖ *Or, in the matter.*

7 For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto holinesse.

8 He therefore that ‖despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also giuen vnto vs his holy Spirit.

‖ *Or, reiecteth.*

9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye need not that I write vnto you: for yee your selues are taught of God to loue one an other.

10 And in deed ye doe it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to doe your owne businesse, and to worke with your owne hands, (as wee commanded you:)

12 That ye may walke honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may haue lacke of ‖nothing.

‖ *Or, of no man.*

13 But I would not haue you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorrow not, euen as others which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus died, and rose againe: euen so them also which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say vnto you by the word of the Lord, That we which are aliue and remaine vnto the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which are asleepe.

16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen with a shout, with the voyce of the Archangel, and with the trumpe of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

17 Then we which are aliue, and remaine, shalbe caught vp together with

them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the aire: and so shall wee euer bee with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, ||comfort one an other with these words.

|| *Or, exhort.*

CHAP. V.

1 Hee proceedeth in the former description of Christs comming to iudgement, 16 and giueth diuers precepts, 23 and so concludeth the Epistle.

BVt of the times and the seasons, brethren, yee haue no need that I write vnto you.

2 For your selues knowe perfectly that the day of the Lord so commeth as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shal say, Peace and safety: then sudden destructiō commeth vpon them, as trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenesse, that that day should ouertake you as a thiefe.

5 Yee are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkenesse.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe, as *doe* others: but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that bee drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs who are of the day, bee sober, putting on the brestplate of faith and loue, and for an helmet, the hope of saluation.

9 For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but to obtaine saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Who died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore, ||comfort your selues together, and edifie one another, euen as also ye doe.

|| *Or, exhort.*

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you:

13 And to esteeme them very highly in loue for their workes sake, and be at peace among your selues.

14 Now we ||exhort you, brethren, warne them that are ||vnruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weake, be patient toward all men.

|| *Or, beseech*
|| *Or, disorderly.*

15 See that none render euill for euill vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good, both among your selues and to all men.

16 Reioyce euermore:

17 Pray without ceasing:

18 In euery thing giue thankes: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the spirit:

20 Despise not prophecyings:

21 Proue all things: hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and *I pray God* your whole spirit, and soule, and body be preserued blamelesse vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Faithfull is hee that calleth you, who also will doe it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I ||charge you by the Lord, that this Epistle bee read vnto all the holy brethren.

|| *Or, adiure.*

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

V ¶ THE

¶ THE SECOND
# of Paul the
Thessa

CHAP. I.

1 S. Paul certifieth them of the good opinion which hee had of their faith, loue, and patience: 11 And therewithall vseth diuers reasons for the comforting of them in persecution, whereof the chiefest is taken from the righteous iudgement of God.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus vnto the Church of the Thessaloniās, in God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ:

2 Grace vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lorde Iesus Christ.

3 Wee are bound to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charitie of euery one of you al towards each other aboundeth:

4 So that wee our selues glorie in you in the Churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that yee endure.

5 *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that yee may bee counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which yee also suffer;

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you who are troubled, rest with vs, when the Lord Iesus shalbe reuealed from heauen, †with his mightie Angels,

8 In flaming fire, ||taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lorde Iesus Christ,

9 Who shalbe punished with euerlasting destruction from the presence of

† *Gr. the angels of his power.*
|| *Or, yeelding.*

EPISTLE
Apostle to the
lonians.

the Lord, and from the glory of his power:

12 When hee shall come to bee glorified in his Saints, and to bee admired in all them that beleeue (because our testimony among you was beleeued) in that day.

11 Wherefore also we pray alwayes for you, that our God would ||count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of *his* goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power: ||*Or, vouch-safe.*

12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may bee glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee willeth them to continue stedfast in the trueth receiued, 3 Sheweth that there shall bee a departure from the faith, 9 and a discouery of Antichrist, before the day of the Lord come. 15 And thereupon repeateth his former exhortation, & prayeth for them.

NOw wee beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our gathering together vnto him,

2 That yee bee not soone shaken in minde, or bee troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from vs, as that the day of Christ is at hand,

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes, for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sinne bee reuealed, the sonne of perdition,

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himselfe aboue all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God, sitteth in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember yee not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things?

6 And

‖ *Or, holdeth.*

6 And now yee know what ‖withholdeth, that hee might bee reuealed in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doth alreadie worke: onely he who now letteth, *will let*, vntill he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked bee reuealed, whome the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comming:

9 *Euen him* whose comming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceiueablenesse of vnrighteousnesse, in them that perish: because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue a lye:

12 That they all might bee damned who beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnes.

13 But we are bound to giue thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the spirit, and beleefe of the trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to the obteining of the glorie of the Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which yee haue beene taught, whether by word or our Epistle.

16 Now our Lorde Iesus Christ himselfe, and God euen our Father, which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery good word and worke.

CHAP. III.

He craueth their prayers for himselfe, 3 testifieth what confidence hee hath in them, 5 maketh request to God in their behalfe, 6 giueth them diuers precepts, especially to shun idlenesse, and ill company, 16 And last of all concludeth with prayer and salutation.

† *Gr. may runne.*

FInally, brethren, pray for vs, that the word of the Lord †may haue *free* course, and be glorified, euen as *it is* with you:

2 And that we may

bee deliuered from †vnreasonable and wicked men: for all men haue not faith. †*Gr. absurd.*

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And wee haue confidence in the Lord touching you, that yee both doe, and will doe the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the loue of God, and into ||the patient waiting for Christ. ||*Or, the patience of Christ.*

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which hee receiued of vs.

7 For your selues know how yee ought to follow vs: for wee behaued not our selues disorderly among you,

8 Neither did wee eate any mans bread for nought: but wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, that wee might not bee chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we haue not power, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when wee were with you, this wee commanded you, that if any would not worke, neither should he eate.

11 For we heare that there are some which walke among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busi-bodies.

12 Now them that are such, we command, and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that with quietnesse they worke, and eat their owne bread.

13 But ye, brethren, ||be not wearie in well doing. ||*Or, faint not.*

14 And if any man obey not our word, by this Epistle ||note that man, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed, ||*Or, signifie that man by an Epistle.*

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himselfe, giue you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul, with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

V 2 ¶ THE

¶ THE FIRST of Paul the Apostle

CHAP. I.

1 Timothie is put in mind of the charge which was giuen vnto him by Paul at his going to Macedonia. 5 Of the right vse and end of the Law. 11 Of Saint Pauls calling to be an Apostle, 20 and of Hymeneus & Alexander.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the commaundement of God our Sauiour, & Lord Iesus Christ *which is* our hope,

2 Vnto Timothie *my* own sonne in the Faith: Grace, mercie, *and* peace from God our Father, and Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither giue heed to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying which is in faith: so doe.

5 Now the end of the commandement is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From which some ‖hauing swarued, haue turned aside vnto vaine iangling,

‖ *Or, not aiming at.*

7 Desiring to bee teachers of the Law, vnderstāding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme.

8 But we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the vngodly, and for sinners, for vnholy, and profane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselues with mankinde, for men-stealers, for liars, for periured persons, and if there be any other thing

EPISTLE
to Timothie.

that is contrary to sound doctrine,
11 According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.
12 And I thanke Christ Iesus our Lord, who hath enabled mee: for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the Ministerie,
13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and iniurious. But I obtained mercie, because I did it ignorantly, in vnbeliefe.
14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, & loue, which is in Christ Iesus.
15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe.
16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first, Iesus Christ might shew foorth all long suffering, for a paterne to them which should hereafter beleeue on him to life euerlasting.
17 Now vnto yͤ king eternal, immortall, inuisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glory for euer & euer. Amen.
18 This charge I commit vnto thee, sonne Timothie, according to the prophesies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare,
19 Holding faith, and a good conscience, which some hauing put away, concerning faith, haue made shipwracke.
20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whome I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they may learne not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 That it is meete to pray and giue thanks for all men, and the reason why. 9 How women should be attired. 12 They are not permitted to teach. 15 They shalbe saued, notwithstanding the testimonies of Gods wrath, in childbirth, if they continue in faith.

I ||ex-

|| *Or, desire.*

I ||Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giuing of thanks be made for all men:

|| *Or, eminent place.*

2 For Kings, and for all that are in ||authoritie, that we may leade a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour,

4 Who will haue all men to bee saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the trueth.

5 For *there is* one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and men, the man Christ Iesus,

|| *Or, a testimony.*

6 Who gaue himselfe a ransome for all, ||to be testified in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that men pray euery where, lifting vp holy handes without wrath, and doubting.

9 In like maner also, that women adorne themselues in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobrietie, not with ||broided haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly aray,

|| *Or, plaited.*

10 But (which becommeth women professing godlines) with good works.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with all subiection:

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eue:

14 And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman being deceiued was in the transgression:

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saued in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charitie, and holinesse, with sobrietie.

CHAP. III.

How Bishops, and Deacons, and their wiues should be qualified, 14 and to what end S. Paul wrote to Timothie of these things. 15 Of the Church, and the blessed trueth therein taught and professed.

THis is a true saying: If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good worke.

2 A Bishop then must

be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, ||of good behauiour, giuen to hospitalitie, apt to teach; || *Or, modest.*

3 Not ||giuen to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not couetous; || *Or, not ready to quarell and offer wrong, as one in wine.*

4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauing his children in subiection with all grauitie.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his owne house, how shall he take care of the Church of God?)

6 Not a ||nouice, lest being lifted vp with pride, hee fall into the condemnation of the deuill. || *Or, one newly come to the faith.*

7 Moreouer, hee must haue a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproch, and the snare of the deuill.

8 Likewise must the Deacons bee graue, not double tongued, not giuen to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre,

9 Holding the mysterie of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proued; then let them vse the office of a Deacon, being *found* blamelesse.

11 Euen so must their wiues be graue; not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their owne houses well.

13 For they that ||haue vsed the office of a Deacon well, purchase to themselues a good degree, and great boldnesse in the faith, *which is* in Christ Iesus. || *Or, ministred.*

14 These things write I vnto thee, hoping to come vnto thee shortly.

15 But if I tary long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the House of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ||ground of the trueth. || *Or, stay.*

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, receiued vp into glory.

CHAP. IIII.

He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 And to the end that Timothie might not faile in doing his duetie, he furnisheth him with diuers precepts belonging thereto.

NOw the Spirit speaketh expresly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giuing heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of deuils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, hauing their conscience seared with a hote iron,

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to absteine from meates, which God hath created to bee receiued with thankesgiuing of them which beleeue, and know the trueth.

4 For euery creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be receiued with thankesgiuing:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, nourished vp in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse prophane and olde wiues fables, and exercise thy selfe *rather* vnto godlinesse.

|| *Or, for a little time.*

8 For bodily exercise profiteth ||litle, but godlinesse is profitable vnto all things, hauing promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

9 This *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation:

10 For therfore we both labour, and suffer reproch, because we trust in the liuing God, who is the Sauiour of all men, specially of those that beleeue.

11 These things command & teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the beleeuers, in word, in conuersation, in charitie, in spirit, in faith, in puritie.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophesie, with the laying on of the hands of the Presbyterie.

|| *Or, in all things.*

15 Meditate vpon these things, giue thy selfe wholly to them, that thy profiting may appeare ||to all.

16 Take heed vnto thy selfe, and vnto the doctrine: continue in them: for in doing this, thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 Rules to be obserued in reproouing. 3 Of

widowes. 17 Of Elders. 23 A precept for Timothies health. 24 Some mens sinnes goe before vnto iudgement, and some mens doe follow after.

REbuke not an Elder, but intreate him as a father, and the yonger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters with all puritie.

3 Honour widowes that are widowes indeed.

4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes, let them learne first to shew ||pietie at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God.

|| *Or, kindenesse.*

5 Now she that is a widow in deed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liueth ||in pleasure, is dead while she liueth.

|| *Or, delicately.*

7 And these things giue in charge, that they may be blamelesse.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne, & specially for those of his owne ||house, hee hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidel.

|| *Or, kindred*

9 Let not a widow bee ||taken into the number, vnder threescore yeeres old, hauing bene the wife of one man,

|| *Or, chosen.*

10 Well reported of for good works, if shee haue brought vp children, if shee haue lodged strangers, if she haue washed the Saints feet, if shee haue releeued the afflicted, if shee haue diligently followed euery good worke.

11 But the yonger widowes refuse: for when they haue begunne to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marry,

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learne *to bee* idle, wandering about from house to house; and not onely idle, but tatlers also, and busibodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, beare children, guid the house, giue none occasion to the aduersary †to speake reprochfully.

† *Gr. for their railing.*

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that beleeueth haue widowes, let them relieue them, and let not the Church be charged,

ged, that it may relieue them that are widowes indeed.

17 Let the Elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

*Deut. 25. 4. *Matth. 10. 10.

18 For the Scripture saith, *Thou shalt not mousell the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, *The labourer is worthy of his reward.

|| *Or, vnder.*

19 Against an Elder receiue not an accusation, but ||before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne rebuke before all, that others also may feare.

|| *Or, without preiudice.*

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things ||without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partialitie.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee partaker of other mens sinnes. Keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomackes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, going before to iudgement: and some *men* they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works *of some* are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of the duetie of seruants. 3 Not to haue fellowship with newfangled teachers. 6 Godlinesse is great gaine, 10 and loue of money the roote of all euill. 11 What Timothie is to flie, and what to follow, 17 and whereof to admonish the rich. 20 To keepe the puritie of true doctrine, and to auoyd prophane ianglings.

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their owne masters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

|| *Or, beleeuing.*

2 And they that haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise *them* because they are brethren: but rather doe *them* seruice, because they are ||faithfull and beloued, partakers of the benefite: These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, *euen* the wordes of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse:

4 Hee is ||proud, knowing nothing, but ||doting about questions, and strifes of wordes, whereof commeth enuie, strife, railings, euill surmisings,

|| *Or, a foole.*
|| *Or, sicke.*

5 ||Peruerse disputings of men of corrupt mindes, and destitute of the trueth, supposing that gaine is godlinesse: From such withdraw thy selfe.

|| *Or, gallings one of another.*

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gaine.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, *and* it is certaine we can cary nothing out.

8 And hauing food and raiment let vs be therewith content.

9 But they that wil be rich, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish & hurtfull lusts, which drowne men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the loue of money is the root of all euill, which while some coueted after, they haue ||erred from the faith, and pierced themselues through with many sorrowes.

|| *Or, bene seduced.*

11 But thon, O man of God, flie these things; and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I giue thee charge in the sight of God, who quickneth all things, and *before* Christ Iesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good ||Confession,

|| *Or, profession.*

14 That thou keepe this commandement without spot, vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed, and onely Potentate, the King of kings, the Lord of lords:

16 Who onely hath immortalitie, dwelling in the light, which no man can approch vnto, whom no man hath seene, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and power euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they bee not high minded, nor trust in †vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God, who giueth vs richly all things to enioy,

† *Gr. vncertaintie of riches.*

18 That they doe good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, ||willing to communicate,

|| *Or, sociable.*

19 Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation against the time to

come, that they may lay holde on eternall life.

20 O Timothie, keepe that which is committed to thy trust, auoyding prophane *and* vaine bablings, and oppositions of science, fasly so called:

21 Which some professing, haue er-

¶ THE SECOND
of Paul the Apostle

CHAP. I.

Pauls loue to Timothie, and the vnfained faith which was in Timothie himselfe, his mother, and grandmother. 6 Hee is exhorted to stirre vp the gift of God which was in him, 8 to be stedfast and patient in persecution, 13 and to persist in the fourme and trueth of that doctrine which hee had learned of him. 15 Phygellus and Hermogenes, and such like are noted, and Onesiphorus is highly commended.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timothie *my* dearely beloued sonne: grace, mercie, *and* peace from God the Father, and Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 I thanke God, whom I serue from *my* forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy teares, that I may bee filled with ioy,

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice: and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

red concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

EPISTLE
to Timothie.

7 For God hath not giuen vs the spirit of feare, but of power, of loue, and of a sound minde.

8 Bee not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but bee thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an holy calling, not according to our workes, but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen vs in Christ Iesus, before the world began,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie to light, through the Gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; neuerthelesse, I am not ashamed: for I know whom I haue ||beleeued, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed vnto him against that day. || *Or, trusted.*

13 Holde fast the fourme of sound words, which thou hast heard of mee, in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That good thing which was committed vnto thee, keepe, by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus, for hee oft refreshed mee, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was in Rome, hee sought mee out very diligently, and found *me*.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that he may finde mercie of the Lord in that day: And in how many things hee ministred vnto mee at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 He is exhorted againe to constancie and perseuerance, and to doe the duetie of a faithfull seruant of the Lord in diuiding the word aright, and staying prophane and vaine bablings. 17 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 19 The foundation of the Lord is sure. 22 Hee is taught whereof to beware, and what to follow after, and in what sort the seruant of the Lord ought to behaue himselfe.

THou therefore, my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

|| *Or, by.*

2 And the things that thou hast heard of mee ||among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore indure hardnesse, as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, intangleth himselfe with the affaires of *this* life, that hee may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also striue for masteries, *yet* is hee not crowned except hee striue lawfully.

|| *Or, the husbandman labouring first, must be partaker of the fruites.*

6 ||The husbandman that laboureth, must bee first partaker of the fruites.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ of the seede of Dauid, was raised from the dead, according to my Gospel:

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euill doer, *euen* vnto bonds: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I indure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtaine the saluation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternall glory.

11 *It is* a faithfull saying: for if we bee dead *with him*, wee shall also liue *with him*.

12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne *with him:* if wee denie him, hee also will denie vs.

13 If we beleeue not, *yet* he abideth faithfull, he cannot denie himselfe.

14 Of these things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, that they striue not about words to no profite, *but* to the subuerting of the hearers.

15 Studie to shewe thy selfe approued vnto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly diuiding the word of trueth.

16 But shun profane and vaine bablings, for they will increase vnto more vngodlinesse.

17 And their word will eate as doth a ||canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus. || *Or, gangrene.*

18 Who concerning the trueth haue erred, saying that the resurrection is past alreadie, and ouerthrow the faith of some.

19 Neuerthelesse the foundation of God standeth ||sure, hauing the seale, the Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let euery one that nameth the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie. || *Or, steady.*

20 But in a great house, there are not onely vessels of gold, and of siluer, but also of wood, & of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shal be a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Masters vse, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flie also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousnesse, faith, charitie, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions auoid, knowing that they doe gender strifes.

24 And the seruant of the Lord must not striue: but bee gentle vnto all men, apt to teach, ||patient, || *Or, forbearing.*

25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose themselues, if God peraduenture will giue them repentance to the acknowledging of the trueth.

26 And that they may †recouer themselues out of the snare of the deuill, who are †taken captiue by him at his will. † *Gr. awake.* † *Gr. taken aliue.*

CHAP. III.

1 Hee aduertiseth him of the times to come, 6 describeth the enemies of the trueth, 10

propoundeth vnto him his owne example, 16 andcommendeth the holy Scriptures.

THis know also, that in the last dayes perillous times shall come.

2 For men shall bee louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proude, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, vnthankfull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, ||false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

|| *Or, makebates.*

4 Traitours, heady, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: from such turne away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and leade captiue silly women laden with sinnes, led away with diuers lusts,

7 Euer learning, and neuer able to come to the knowledge of the trueth.

8 Now as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the trueth: men of corrupt mindes, ||reprobate concerning the faith.

|| *Or, of no iudgement.*

9 But they shal proceede no further: for their folly shall be manifest vnto all *men*, as theirs also was.

10 But ||thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of life, purpose, faith, long suffering, charitie, patience,

|| *Or, thou hast been a diligent follower of.*

11 Persecutions, afflictions which came vnto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I indured: but out of them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But euill men and seducers shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast been assured of, knowing of whome thou hast learned *them*.

15 And that from a childe thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 All Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, & *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproofe, for correction, for instrution in righteousnesse,

17 That the man of God may be perfect, ||throughly furnished vnto all good workes. || *Or, perfected.*

CHAP. IIII.

1 Hee exhorteth him to doe his duety with all care and diligence, 6 certifieth him of the neerenesse of his death, 9 willeth him to come speedily vnto him, and to bring Marcus with him, and certaine other things which he wrote for, 14 warneth him to beware of Alexander the smith, 16 informeth him what had befallen him at his first answering, 19 and soone after hee concludeth.

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, who shall iudge the quicke and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprooue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering & doctrine.

3 For the time wil come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their owne lusts shall they heape to themselues teachers, hauing itching eares:

4 And they shall turne away their eares from the trueth, and shall be turned vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, indure afflictions, doe the worke of an Euangelist, ||make full proofe of thy ministery. || *Or, fulfill.*

6 For I am now readie to bee offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my course, I haue kept the faith.

8 Hencefoorth there is layde vp for me a crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue me at that day: and not to me only, but vnto them also that loue his appearing.

9 Doe thy diligence to come shortly vnto me:

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, hauing loued this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministerie.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas

with Carpus, when thou commest, bring *with thee*, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the Coppersmith did mee much euill, the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom bee thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood ||our words.

|| *Or, our preachings.*

16 At my first answere no man stood with mee, but all men forsooke mee: *I pray God* that it may not bee laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully knowen, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer mee from euery euill worke, and will pre-

¶ THE
Paul

CHAP. I.

1 For what end Titus was left in Crete. 6 How they that are to bee chosen ministers, ought to bee qualified. 11 The mouthes of euill teachers to bee stopped: 12 and what manner of men they bee.

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the Faith of Gods Elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth which is after godlinesse,

2 ||In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began:

|| *Or, for.*

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed vnto mee according to the commandement of God our Sauiour:

4 To Titus mine owne Sonne after the common faith, Grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

serue me vnto his heauenly kingdome; to whom *bee* glory for euer, and euer. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the houshold of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ *bee* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle vnto Timotheus, ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

EPISTLE OF to Titus.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that ||are wanting, and ordaine Elders in euery citie, as I had appointed thee.

|| *Or, left vndone.*

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, not accused of riot, or vnruly.

7 For a Bishop must be blameles, as the steward of God: not selfewilled, not soone angry, not *giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre,

* 1. Tim. 3. 6.

8 But a louer of hospitality, a louer of ||good men, sober, iust, holy, temperate,

|| *Or, good things.*

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, ||as hee hath beene taught, that he may bee able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to conuince the gainsayers.

|| *Or, in teaching.*

10 For there are many vnruly and vaine talkers and deceiuers, specially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, who subuert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthie lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, *euen* a Prophet of their owne, said: The Cretians are alway lyers, euill beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharpely that they may be sound in the faith;

14 Not giuing heede to Iewish fables, and commandements of men that turne from the trueth.

15 Vnto the pure all things are pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, is nothing pure: but euen their mind and conscience is defiled.

16 They professe that they know God; but in workes they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke ‖reprobate.

‖ *Or, voide of iugment.*

CHAP. II.

1 Directions giuen vnto Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 Of the duetie of seruants, and in generall of all Christians.

BVt speake thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men be ‖sober, graue, temperate, sound in faith, in charitie, in patience.

‖ *Or, vigilant*

3 The aged women likewise that *they be* in behauiour as becommeth ‖holinesse, not ‖false accusers, not giuen to much wine, teachers of good things,

‖ *Or, holy women.*
‖ *Or, make-bates.*

4 That they may teach the young women to bee ‖sober, to loue their husbands, to loue their children,

‖ *Or, wise.*

5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God bee not blasphemed.

6 Yong men likewise exhort, to bee ‖sober minded.

‖ *Or, discreet*

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a patterne of good workes: in doctrine *shewing* vncorruptnesse, grauity, sinceritie,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned, that hee that is of the contrarie part, may bee ashamed, hauing no euill thing to say of you.

9 *Exhort* seruants to be obedient vnto their own masters, and to please *them* well in all things, not ‖answering againe:

‖ *Or, gaine-saying.*

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things.

11 For the grace of God ‖that brin-

‖ *Or, that bringeth saluation to all men, hath appeared.*

geth saluatiō, hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching vs that denying vngodlinesse and worldly lusts we should liue soberly, righteously and godly in this present world,

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purifie vnto himselfe a peculiar people, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authoritie. Let no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is yet further directed by Paul, both concerning the things he should teach, and not teach. 10 He is willed also to reiect obstinate Heretikes: 12 which done, hee appointeth him both time and place, wherein hee should come vnto him, & so concludeth.

PVt them in minde to bee subiect to Principalities & Powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to euery good worke,

2 To speake euill of no man, to bee no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.

3 For we our selues also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts and pleasures, liuing in malice and enuy, hatefull, *and* hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ||loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared, || *Or, pitie.*

5 Not by workes of righteousnesse which wee haue done, but according to his mercy he saued vs, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which hee shed on vs †abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauiour: † *Gr. richly.*

7 That being iustified by his grace, we should bee made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 *This is* a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly, that they which haue beleeued in God, might be carefull to maintaine good works: these things are good and profitable vnto men.

9 But auoyd foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and striuings about the lawe; for they are vnprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and second admonition, reiect:

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is subuerted, and sinneth, being condemned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come vnto mee to Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, and Apollos, on their iourney diligently,

¶ THE
Paul

4 Hee reioyceth to heare of the faith and loue of Philemon, 9 Whom he desireth to forgiue his seruant Onesimus, and louingly to receiue him againe.

PAul a prisoner of Iesus Christ, & Timothie our brother vnto Philemon our dearely beloued, and fellow labourer,

2 And to our beloued Apphia, and Archippus our fellow Souldier, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy loue, and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saints:

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of euery good thing, which is in you in Christ Iesus.

7 For wee haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because the bowels of the Saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might bee much bolde in Christ to enioyne thee that which is conuenient;

9 Yet for loues sake I rather be-

that nothing be wanting vnto them.

14 And let ours also learne to ‖maintaine good workes for necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

‖ *Or, professe honest trades*

15 All that are with mee salute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

EPISTLE OF
to Philemon.

seech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Iesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whome I haue begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therfore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whome I would haue reteined with mee, that in thy stead hee might haue ministred vnto me in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefite should not bee as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For perhaps hee therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer:

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, a brother beloued, specially to mee, but how much more vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count mee therefore a partner, receiue him as my selfe.

18 If hee hath wronged thee, or oweth *thee ought*, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul haue written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I doe not say to thee how thou owest vnto

me, euen thine owne selfe besides:

20 Yea, brother, let mee haue ioy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowles in the Lord.

21 Hauing confidence in thy obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt also doe more then I say.

22 But withall prepare mee also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be giuen vnto you.

¶ THE EPISTLE the Apostle to the

CHAP. I.

1 Christ in these last times comming to vs from the Father, 4 is preferred aboue the Angels, both in Person and Office.

GOd who at sundry times, and in diuers manners, spake in time past vnto the Fathers by the Prophets,

2 Hath in these last dayes spoken vnto vs by *his* Sonne, whom he hath appointed heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds,

3 *Who being the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and vpholding all things by the word of his power, when hee had by himselfe purged our sinnes, sate down on ẏͤ right hand of the Maiestie on high,

*Wis. 7. 26.

4 Being made so much better then the Angels, as hee hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, Thou art my sonne, this day haue I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Sonne.

6 And againe, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, hee saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.

7 And of the Angels he saith: Who

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus:

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a seruant.

OF PAVL

Hebrewes.

maketh his Angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But vnto the Sonne, *he saith*, Thy throne, O God, *is* for euer and euer: a scepter of †righteousnesse *is* the scepter of thy kingdome. † *Gr. rightnesse, or straightnes.*

9 Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie, therefore God, *euen* thy God hath anointed thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

10 And, *thou Lord in the beginning hast layed the foundation of the earth: and the heauens are the works of thine hands. * Psa. 102. 2. esa. 34. 4.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shal waxe old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile?

13 But to which of the Angels said hee at any time, *Sit on my right hand, vntill I make thine enemies thy footstoole? * Psal. 110. 1. matt. 22. 44.

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent foorth to minister for them, who shall be heires of saluation?

CHAP. II.

1 Wee ought to bee obedient to Christ Iesus, 5 and that because he vouchsafed to take our nature vpon him, 14 as it was necessarie.

THerefore we ought to giue the more earnest heede to the things which we haue heard, lest at any time we should †let them slip. † *Gr. run out as leaking vessels.*

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast, and euery transgression and disobedience receiued a iust recompense of reward:

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, *and* was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard *him*,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with signes & wonders, and with diuers miracles, ||and gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

|| *Or, distributions.*

5 For vnto the Angels hath he not put in subiection the world to come, whereof we speake.

* Psal. 8. 4.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying: *What is man, that thou art mindfull of him: or the Sonne of man that thou visitest him?

7 Thou madest him a ||little lower then the Angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honor, and didst set him ouer the workes of thy hands.

|| *Or, a little while inferiour to.*

8 Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feete. For in that he put all in subiection vnder him, hee left nothing that is not put vnder him. But now wee see not yet all things put vnder him.

9 But wee see Iesus, who was made a little lower then the Angels, ||for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that hee by the grace of God should taste death for euery man.

|| *Or, by.*

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sonnes vnto glory, to make the Captaine of their saluation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both hee that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to cal them brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise vnto thee.

* Psal. 18. 2.
* Esay 8. 18.

13 And againe, *I will put my trust in him: and againe, *Behold, I, and the children which God hath giuen me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himselfe likewise took part of the same, that through death hee might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the deuill:

15 And deliuer them, who through

feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For verely he †tooke not on him *the nature of* Angels: but he tooke on *him* the seed of Abraham.

† *Gr. hee taketh not hold of Angels, but of the seede of Abraham he taketh hold.*

17 Wherfore in all things it behooued him to bee made like vnto his brethren, that he might be a mercifull and faithfull high Priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he himselfe hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses, 7 therefore if we beleeue not in him, we shalbe more worthy punishmēt then hard hearted Israel.

WHerfore holy brethrē, partakers of the heauenly calling, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession Christ Iesus,

2 Who was faithful to him that †appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

†*Gr. made,* 1. *Sam.* 12. 6

3 For this *man* was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded by some man, but hee that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verely was faithfull in all his house as a seruant, for a testimonie of those things which were to be spoken after.

6 But Christ as a Sonne ouer his owne house, whose house are wee, if we hold fast the confidence, and the reioycing of the hope firme vnto the end.

7 Wherfore as the holy Ghost saith, *To day if ye will heare his voyce,

Psal. 95. 7.

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your fathers tempted me, prooued me, and saw my works fourty yeeres.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and sayd, They doe alway erre in their hearts, and they haue not knowen my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath: †they shall not enter into my rest.

† *Gr. if they shall enter.*

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an euill heart of vnbeleefe, in departing from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called To day, least any of you be hardned through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.

14 For wee are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast vnto the end.

15 Whilest it is sayd, To day if yee will heare his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did prouoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieued fourty yeeres? *was it* not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wildernesse?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleeued not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeleefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rest of Christians is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By our High Priest Iesus the sonne of God, subiect to infirmities, but not sinne, 16 wee must and may go boldly to the throne of grace.

LEt vs therefore feare, lest a promise being left *vs*, of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to come short of it.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached, as well as vnto thē: but †the word preached did not profit them, ||not being mixed with faith in them that heard *it*.

† *Gr. the word of hearing.*
|| *Or, because they were not vnited by faith to.*

3 For we which haue beleeued do enter into rest, as hee said, As I haue sworne in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest, although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise: And God did rest the seuenth day from all his works.

5 And in this place againe: If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therfore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom ||it was first preached, entred not in because of vnbeleefe:

|| *Or, the Gospel was first preached.*

7 Againe, hee limiteth a certaine day, saying in Dauid, To day, after so long a time; as it is saide, To day if ye will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

8 For if ||Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not afterward haue spoken of another day.

|| *That is, Iosuah.*

9 There remaineth therefore a ||rest to the people of God.

|| *Or, keeping of a Sabbath*

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hee also hath ceased from his owne works, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of ||vnbeleefe.

|| *Or, disobedience.*

12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull, and sharper then any two edged sword, pearcing euen to the diuiding asunder of soule and spirit, and of the ioynts and marrowe, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things *are* naked, and opened vnto the eyes of him with whome wee haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great high Priest, that is passed into the heauens, Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs hold fast *our* profession.

15 For wee haue not an high Priest which cannot bee touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, *yet* without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne of grace, that wee may obtaine mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of need.

CHAP. V.

1 The authoritie and honour of our Sauiours Priesthood. 11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reprooued.

FOr euery high Priest taken from among men, is ordeined for men in things *pertaining* to God, that hee may offer both giftes & sacrifices for sins.

2 Who ||can haue compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himselfe also is compassed with infirmitie.

|| *Or, can reasonably beare with.*

3 And by reason heereof hee ought as for the people, so also for himselfe, to offer for sinnes.

4 And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but hee that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himselfe, to bee made an High Priest: but

hee that saide vnto him, Thou art my Sonne, to day haue I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou *art* a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when hee had offered vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was heard, ||in that he feared.

|| *Or, for his pietie.*

8 Though hee were a Sonne, yet learned hee obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him,

10 Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchisedec:

11 Of whom we haue many things to say, and hard to be vttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time yee ought to bee teachers, yee haue neede that one teach you againe which be the first principles of the Oracles of God, and are become such as haue need of milke, and not of strong meat.

13 For euery one that vseth milke, is †vnskilful in the word of righteousnes: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are ||of full age, *euen* those who by reason ||of vse haue their senses exercised to discerne both good and euil.

† *Gr. hath no experience.*
|| *Or, perfect.*
|| *Or, of an habite, or perfection.*

CHAP. VI.

1 Hee exhorteth not to fall backe from the faith, 11 But to bee stedfast, 12 diligent, and patient to waite vpon God, 13 because God is most sure in his promise.

THerefore leauing the ||principles of the doctrine of Christ, let vs goe on vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith towards God,

|| *Or, the word of the beginning of Christ.*

2 Of the doctrine of Baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once inlightned, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And haue tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renue them againe vnto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselues the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them ||by whome it is dressed, receiueth blessing from God.

|| *Or, for.*

8 But that which beareth thornes and briers, is reiected, and is nigh vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloued, wee are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God is not vnrighteous, to forget your worke and labour of loue, which yee haue shewed toward his Name, in that yee haue ministred to the Saints, and doe minister.

11 And wee desire, that euery one of you doe shewe the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the ende:

12 That yee be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherite the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because hee could sweare by no greater, he sware by himselfe,

14 Saying, Surely, blessing I will blesse thee, and multiplying I wil multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently indured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily sweare by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shewe vnto the heyres of promise the immutabilitie of his counsell, †confirmed *it* by an oath:

† *Gr. interposed himselfe by an oath.*

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lye, wee might haue a strong consolation, who haue fled for refuge to lay hold vpon the hope set before vs.

19 Which *hope* we haue as an anker of the soule both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entrrd; *euen* Iesus, made an high Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

X 3 CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ Iesus is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 And so, farre more excellent then the Priests of Aarons order.

FOR this Melchisedec king of Salem, Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also king of Salem, which is, king of peace.

† *Gr. without pedigree.*

3 Without father, without mother, †without descent, hauing neither beginning of dayes nor end of life: but made like vnto the Sonne of God, abideth a Priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was, vnto whō euen the patriarch Abraham gaue the tenth of the spoiles.

5 And verily they that are of the sonnes of Leui, who receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a commandement to take Tithes of the people according to the Law, that is of their brethren, though they come out of the loines of Abraham:

|| *Or, pedigree.*

6 But he whose ||descent is not counted from them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receiue tithes: but there hee *receiueth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liueth.

9 And as I may so say, Leui also who receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For hee was yet in the loynes of his Father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leuiticall Priesthood (for vnder it the people receiued the Law) what further neede was there, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not bee called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the Priesthood being chaunged, there is made of necessitie a change also of the Law.

13 For hee of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the Altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lorde sprang out of Iuda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing cōcerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet farre more euident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest,

16 Who is made not after the Law of a carnall commandement, but after the power of an endles life.

17 For hee testifieth; Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disanulling of the commandement going before, for the weakenesse and vnprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For the Law made nothing perfect, ‖but the bringing in of a better hope *did*: by the which wee draw nigh vnto God.

‖ *Or, but it was the bringing in.*

20 And in as much as not without an othe *he was made Priest*,

21 (For those *Priests* were made ‖without an oath: but this with an oath, by him yͭ said vnto him, *The Lord sware and wil not repent, thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec)

‖ *Or, without swearing of an othe.*

*Psa. 110. 4

22 By so much was Iesus made a suertie of a better Testament.

23 And they truely were many Priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.

24 But this man because hee continueth euer, hath an ‖vnchangeable Priesthood.

‖ *Or, which passeth not from one to another.*

25 Wherefore he is able also to saue them ‖to the vttermost, that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth to make intercession for them.

‖ *Or, euermore.*

26 For such an high Priest became vs, *who is* holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens.

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high Priests, to offer vp sacrifice, first for his owne sins and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered vp himselfe.

28 For the Law maketh men high Priests which haue infirmitie, but the word of the othe which was since the Law, *maketh* the Sonne, who is †consecrated for euermore.

† *Gr. perfected.*

CHAP. VIII.

1 By the eternall Priesthood of Christ, the Leuiticall Priesthood of Aaron is abolished. 7 And the temporall Couenant with the Fathers, by the eternal Couenant of the Gospel.

NOw of the things which we haue spoken, *this is* the summe: wee haue such an high Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in the heauens:

|| *Or, of holy things.*

2 A minister ||of the Sanctuary, and of the true Tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For euery high Priest is ordeined to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

|| *Or, they are Priests.*

4 For if he were on earth, he should not bee a Priest, seeing that ||there are Priests that offer gifts according to the Law:

5 Who serue vnto the example and shadow of heauenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the paterne shewed to thee in the mount.

|| *Or, Testament.*

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministerie, by how much also he is the Mediatour of a better ||Couenant, which was established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Couenant* had bene faultles, then should no place haue bene sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, hee saith, Behold, the dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new couenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Iudah.

9 Not according to the Couenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my Couenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

*Ier. 31. 33.
† *Gr. giue.*
|| *Or, vpon.*

10 For this is the Couenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord: *I wil †put my Lawes into their minde, and write them ||in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shalbe to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: For all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnes, and their sins & their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new *Couenant*, he hath made the first olde. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is readie to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 The description of the rites and bloody sacrifices of the Law, 11 farre inferiour to the dignitie and perfection of the blood and sacrifice of Christ.

THen verily the first *Couenant* had also ||ordinances of diuine Seruice, and a worldly Sanctuary. || *Or, ceremonies.*

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first, wherein was the Candlesticke, and the Table, and the Shewbread, which is called ||the Sanctuarie. || *Or, holy.*

3 Andafter the second vaile, the Tabernacle which is called yͤ Holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden Censor, and the Arke of the Couenant ouerlayed round about with gold, wherein was the Golden pot that had Manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the Tables of the Couenant.

5 And ouer it the Cherubims of glory shadowing the Mercyseat; of which we cannot now speake particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the Priestes went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, accomplishing the seruice of God.

7 But into the second *went* the high Priest alone once euery yeere, not without blood, which he offered for himselfe, and for the errors of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the Holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which *was* a figure for the time then present, in which were offred both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the seruice perfect, as pertayning to the conscience,

10 *Which stood* onely in meates and drinkes, and diuers washings, and ||carnall ordinances imposed on them vntill the time of reformation. || *Or, rites, or ceremonies.*

11 But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building:

12 Neither by the blood of Goats and Calues: but by his owne blood hee entred in once into the Holy place, ha-

uing obtained eternall redemption *for vs.*

13 For if the blood of Bulls, and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the vncleane, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit, offered himselfe without ||spot to God, purge your conscience from dead workes, to serue the liuing God?

|| *Or, fault.*

15 And for this cause hee is the Mediatour of the New Testament, that by meanes of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* vnder the first Testament, they which are called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a Testament is, there must also of necessitie ||bee the death of the Testatour.

|| *Or, bee brought in.*

17 For a Testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilest the Testatour liueth.

18 Whereupon, neither the first *Testament* was ||dedicated without blood.

|| *Or, purified.*

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all the people according to the Law, he tooke the blood of Calues and of Goates, with water and ||scarlet wooll, and hysope, and sprinckled both the booke and all the people,

|| *Or, purple.*

20 Saying, This is the blood of the Testament which God hath enioyned vnto you.

21 Moreouer, hee sprinkled with blood both the Tabernacle, and all the vessels of the Ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heauens should bee purified with these, but the heauenly things themselues with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the Holy places made with handes, which are the figures of the true, but into heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the presence of God for vs.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entreth into the Holy place, euery yeere with blood of others:

26 For then must hee often haue suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world,

hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, but after this the Iudgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sinnes of many, & vnto them that looke for him shall hee appeare the second time without sinne, vnto saluation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakenesse of the Law sacrifices. 10 The sacrifice of Christs body once offered, 14 for euer, hath taken away sinnes. 19 An exhortation to hold fast the faith, with patience and thankesgiuing.

FOr the Law hauing a shadow of good things to come, and not the very Image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices which they offered yeere by yeere continually, make the commers thereunto perfect:

2 For then would they not haue ceased to be offered, because that the worshippers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those sacrifices *there is* a remembrance againe *made* of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of Bulles and of Goats, should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when hee commeth into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou ||prepared mee:

|| *Or, thou hast fitted me.*

6 In burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sinne thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Loe, I come. (In the volume of the booke it is written of me) to doe thy will, O God.

8 Aboue when hee said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt offerings, and offering for sinne thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the Law:

9 Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will (O God:) He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will wee are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Iesus Christ once for all.

11 And euery Priest standeth dayly ministring and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can neuer take away sinnes.

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes for euer, sate downe on the right hand of God,

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstoole.

14 For by one offering hee hath perfected for euer them that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to vs: for after that he had said before,

*Iere. 31. 33.

16 This is the Couenant that I wil make with them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will *put my Lawes into their hearts, and in their mindes will I write them:

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now, where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sinne.

‖ *Or, libertie.*

19 Hauing therefore, brethren, ‖boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Iesus,

‖ *Or, new made.*

20 By a new and liuing way which hee hath ‖consecrated for vs, through the vaile, that is to say, His flesh:

21 And *hauing* an high Priest ouer the house of God:

22 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart in full assurance of faith, hauing our hearts sprinkled from an euill conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let vs hold fast the profession of our faith without wauering (for he is faithfull that promised)

24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selues together, as the manner of some is: but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see the day approching.

26 For if we sinne wilfully after that we haue receiued the knowledge of the trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes,

27 But a certaine fearefull looking for of iudgement, and fiery indignation, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 Hee that despised Moses Lawe, died without mercy, vnder two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment *suppose ye*, shall hee be thought worthy, who hath troden vnder foote yͤ Sonne of God, and hath counted the blood of the couenant wherwith he was sanctified, an vnholy thing, and hath done de-

spite vnto the spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath said, *Vengeance belongeth vnto me, I wil recompence, saith the Lord: and again, The Lord shall iudge his people.

*Deut. 32. 35. Rom. 12. 19.

31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God.

32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in which after yee were illuminated, ye indured a great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whilest ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproches & afflictions, and partly whilest ye became companions of them that were so vsed.

34 For yee had compassion of me in my bonds, and tooke ioyfully the spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues that yee haue in heauen a better and an induring substance.

35 Cast not away therfore your confidence which hath great recompense of reward.

36 For ye haue need of patience, that shall after ye haue done the will of God ye might receiue the promise.

37 For yet a litle while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tary.

38 Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if any man drawe backe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.

39 But wee are not of them who draw backe vnto perdition: but of them that beleeue, to the sauing of the soule.

CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without faith we cannot please God. 7 The worthy fruits thereof in the Fathers of old time.

NOw faith is the ||substance of things hoped for, the euidence of things not seen.

|| *Or, ground, or confidence*

2 For by it the Elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we vnderstand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seene were not made of things which doe appeare.

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a more excellent sacrifice then Kain, by which he obtained witnes that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, ||yet speaketh.

|| *Or, is yet spoken of.*

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death, and was not found, because God had translated him: For before his translation he had this testimonie, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for hee that commeth to God, must beleeue that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seeke him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seene as yet, ||moued with feare, prepared an Arke to the sauing of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heire of the righteousnesse which is by faith.

|| *Or, being wary.*

8 By faith Abraham when he was called to goe out into a place which hee should after receiue for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith hee soiourned in the land of promise, as in a strange countrey, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Iacob, the heires with him of the same promise.

10 For hee looked for a citie which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her selfe receiued strength to conceiue seede, and was deliuered of a child when she was past age, because she iudged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therfore sprang there euen of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

13 These all died †in faith, not hauing receiued the promises, but hauing seene them a farre off, and were perswaded of *them*, and embraced *them*, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

† *Gr. according to faith.*

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seeke a countrey.

15 And truly if they had been mindfull of that *countrey*, from whence they came out, they might haue had opportunitie to haue returned:

16 But now they desire a better countrey, that is, an heauenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to bee called their God: for he hath prepared for thē a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tried, offered vp Isaac: and he that had receiued the promises, offered vp his onely begotten sonne,

18 ||Of whom it was said, That, in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

|| *Or, To.*

19 Accounting that God was able to raise *him* vp, euen from the dead: from whence also he receiued him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Iacob when hee was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and worshipped *leaning* vpon the top of his staffe.

22 By faith, Ioseph when hee died, ||made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gaue commandement concerning his bones. || *Or, remembred.*

23 By faith, Moses when hee was borne was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper childe, and they not afraid of the Kings commandement.

24 By faith Moses when hee was come to yeeres, refused to bee called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter,

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season:

26 Esteeming the reproch ||of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect vnto the recompense of the reward. || *Or, for Christ.*

27 By faith hee forsooke Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he indured, as seeing him who is inuisible.

28 Through faith he kept the Passeouer, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the red sea, as by drie land: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 By faith the walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them ||that beleeued not, when shee had receiued the spies with peace. || *Or, that were disobedient.*

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would faile mee to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Sampson, and of Iephthah, of Dauid also and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obteined promises, stopped the mouthes of Lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakenesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women receiued their dead raised to life againe: and others were *tortured, not accepting deliuerance, that they *2. Macc. 7. 7.

they might obtaine a better resurrection.

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreouer, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawen asunder, were tempted, were slaine with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskinnes, and goat skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whome the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dennes and caues of the earth.

39 And these all hauing obtained a good report through faith, receiued not the promise:

40 God hauing ||prouided some better thing for vs, that they without vs, should not be made perfect.

|| *Or, foreseene.*

CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to constant faith, patience, and godlinesse. 22 A commendation of the New Testament aboue the Old.

WHerefore, seeing wee also are compassed about with so great a cloude of witnesses, let vs lay aside euery weight, & the sinne which doth so easily beset vs, and let vs runne with patience vnto the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the ||Authour and finisher of *our* faith, who for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

|| *Or, beginner.*

3 For consider him that indured such contradiction of sinners against himselfe, lest ye be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Yee haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striuing against sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortation which speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whome the Lord loueth hee chasteneth, and scourgeth euery sonne whom he receiueth.

7 If yee endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sonnes: for what sonne is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement,

whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, wee haue had fathers of our flesh, which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: shall we not much rather bee in subiection vnto the Father of Spirits, and liue?

10 For they verily for a fewe dayes chastened vs after their owne pleasure, but hee for our profit, that we might bee partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be ioyous, but grieuous: neuerthelesse, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruite of righteousnesse, vnto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift vp the handes which hang downe, and the feeble knees.

13 And make ||straight paths for your feete, lest that which is lame bee turned out of the way, but let it rather bee healed. || *Or, euen.*

14 Followe peace with all men, and holinesse, without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man ||faile of the grace of God, lest any roote of bitternesse springing vp, trouble *you*, and thereby many be defiled: || *Or, fal from*

16 Lest there bee any fornicatour, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsell of meat sold his birthright.

17 For yee know how that afterward when hee would haue inherited the blessing, hee was reiected: for hee found no ||place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with teares. || *Or, way to change his minde.*

18 For yee are not come vnto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor vnto blacknesse, and darknes, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voyce of wordes, which *voyce* they that heard, entreated that the word should not bee spoken to them any more.

20 For they could not indure that which was commaunded: And if so much as a beast touch the Mountaine, it shall be stoned, or thrust thorow with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses sayde, I exceedingly feare, and quake.

22 But ye are come vnto mount Sion, and vnto the citie of the liuing God the heauenly Ierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels:

23 To the generall assembly, and Church of the first borne which are ||written in heauen, and to God the Iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust men made perfect:

|| *Or, inrouled.*

24 And to Iesus the mediatour of the new ||Couenant, and to the blood of sprinckling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

|| *Or, Testament.*

25 See that yee refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we *escape* if wee turne away from him that *speaketh* from heauen.

26 Whose voice then shooke the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth onely, but also heauen.

27 And this *word* Yet once more, signifieth the remouing of those things that ||are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remaine.

|| *Or, may be shaken.*

28 Wherefore wee receiuing a kingdome which cannot bee moued, ||let vs haue grace, whereby wee may serue God acceptably, with reuerence and godly feare.

|| *Or, let vs hold fast.*

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Diuers admonitions, as to Charitie, 4 To honest life, 5 To auoide couetousnes, 7 To regarde Gods preachers, 9 To take heed of strange doctrines, 10 To confesse Christ, 16 To giue almes, 17 To obey gouernors, 18 To pray for the Apostle. 20 The Conclusion.

LEt brotherly loue continue.

2 Bee not forgetfull to entertaine strangers, for thereby some haue entertayned Angels vnawares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; *and* them which suffer aduersitie, as being your se lues also in the body.

4 Mariage *is* honorable in all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers, and adulterers God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation bee without couetousnesse: and be content with such things as yee haue. For hee hath said, *I will neuer leaue thee, nor forsake thee.

*Ios. 1. 5.

6 So that wee may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not

feare what man shall doe vnto me.

7 Remember them which ‖haue the rule ouer you, who haue spoken vnto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conuersation.

‖ *Or, are the guides*

8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue beene occupied therein.

10 Wee haue an altar whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue the Tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the Sanctuary by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe.

12 Wherefore Iesus also, that hee might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs goe foorth therefore vnto him without the campe, bearing his reproch.

14 *For here haue we no continuing citie, but we seeke one to come.

*Mich. 2. 10

15 By him therefore let vs offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lippes, †giuing thankes to his Name.

† *Gr. confessing to.*

16 But to doe good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

17 Obey them that ‖haue the rule ouer you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue account, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

‖ *Or, guide.*

18 Pray for vs: for we trust wee haue a good conscience in all things, willing to liue honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to doe this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace, that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, that great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting ‖Couenant,

‖ *Or, Testament.*

21 Make you perfect in euery good worke to doe his will, ‖working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom be glorie for euer and euer. Amen.

‖ *Or, doing.*

22 And I beseech you brethren, suf-

fer the word of exhortation, for I haue written a letter vnto you in few words.

23 Know yee, that our brother Timothie is set at libertie, with whom if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the

¶ THE Epistle

CHAP. I.

Wee are to reioyce vnder the Crosse, 5 To aske patience of God, 13 And in our trials not to impute our weakenesse, or sinnes vnto him, 19 but rather to hearken to the word, to meditate in it, and to doe thereafter. 26 Otherwise men may seeme, but neuer be truely religious.

IAmes a seruant of God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all ioy when ye fall into diuers temptations,

3 Knowing *this*, that the trying of your faith worketh patience,

4 But let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that ye may be perfect, and entier, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God, that giueth to all men liberally, and vpbraideth not: and it shalbe giuen him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing wauering: for he that wauereth is like a waue of the sea, driuen with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man thinke that he shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man *is* vnstable in all his wayes.

|| *Or, glory.* 9 Let the brother of low degree, ||reioyce in that he is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that hee is made low: because as the floure of the grasse he shall passe away.

rule ouer you, and al the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes, from Italy, by Timothie.

GENERALL
of Iames.

11 For the Sunne is no sooner risen with a burning heate, but it withereth the grasse; and the flowre thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when hee is tried, hee shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with ||euill, neither tempteth he any man. || *Or, euils.*

14 But euery man is tempted, when hee is drawen away of his owne lust, and entised.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne: and sinne, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Doe not erre, my beloued brethren.

17 Euery good gift, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, & commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begate hee vs, with the word of Trueth, that wee should bee a kinde of first fruites of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my beloued brethren, let euery man bee swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of naughtinesse, & receiue with meeknesse the engrafted word, which is able to saue your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and

Y not

not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like vnto a man beholding his naturall face in a glasse:

24 For hee beholdeth himselfe, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what maner of man he was.

25 But who so looketh into the perfect Law of libertie, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall be blessed in his ‖deed.

‖ *Or, doing.*

26 If any man among you seeme to be religious, & bridleth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God and the Facher, is this, to visit the fatherlesse and widowes in their affliction, *and* to keepe himselfe vnspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

It is not agreeable to Christian profession to regard the rich, and to despise the poore brethren: 13 rather wee are to be louing, and mercifull: 14 And not to boast of faith where no deedes are, 17 which is but a dead faith, 19 the faith of deuils, 21 not of Abraham, 25 and Rahab.

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ *the Lord* of glorie, with respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your †assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poore man, in vile raiment:

† *Gr. Synagogue.*

3 And yee haue respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou here ‖in a good place: and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footstoole:

‖ *Or, well, or seemely.*

4 Are yee not then partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euill thoughts?

5 Hearken, my beloued brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, rich in faith, and heires of ‖the kingdome, which hee hath promised to them that loue him?

‖ *Or, that.*

6 But yee haue despised the poore. Doe not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the Iudgement seats?

7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfil the royall Law, accor-

ding to the Scripture, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye doe well.

9 But if ye haue respect to persons, ye commit sinne, *and* are conuinced of the Law, as transgressours.

10 For whosoeuer shall keepe the whole Law, & yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For he †that said, Doe not commit adultery; sayd also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the Law.

† *Or, that* Law *which said.*

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shall bee iudged by the Law of libertie.

13 For he *shall haue* iudgement without mercie, that hath shewed no mercy, & mercie ||reioyceth against iudgement.

|| *Or, glorieth*

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say hee hath faith, and haue not workes? can faith saue him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of dayly foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed & filled: notwithstanding ye giue them not those things which are needfull to the body: what doth it profit?

17 Euen so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being †alone.

† *Gr. by it selfe.*

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I haue workes: shew mee thy faith ||without thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

|| Some copies reade, *by thy workes.*

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God, thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou knowe, O vaine man, that faith without workes is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified by works, when hee had offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

22 ||Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

|| *Or, thou seest.*

23 And the Scripture was fullfiled which saith, *Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnes: and he was called the friend of God.

*Gen. 15. 6 rom. 4. 3. gal. 3. 6.

24 Ye see then, how that by workes a man is iustified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot iustified by works, when she had receiued the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the ||spirit is

|| *Or, breath.*

rit is dead, so faith without workes is dead also.

CHAP. III.

1 We are not rashly or arrogantly to reprooue others: 5 but rather to bridle the tongue, a little member, but a powerfull instrument of much good, and great harme. 13 They who be truely wise, be milde, and peaceable, without enuying, and strife.

MY brethren, bee not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater ||condemnation.

|| *Or, iudgement.*

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bittes in the horses mouthes, that they may obey vs, and we turne about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helme, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold, how great ||a matter a litle fire kindleth.

|| *Or, wood.*

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquitie: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For euery †kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of †mankind.

† *Gr. nature.*

† *Gr. nature of man.*

8 But the tongue can no man tame, *it is* an vnruly euill, ful of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse wee God, euen the Father: and therewith curse wee men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doeth a fountaine send foorth at the same ||place sweet water and bitter?

|| *Or, hole.*

12 Can ẏͤ figtree, my brethren, beare oliue berries? either a vine, figs? so *can* no fountaine both yeeld salt water & fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and indued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conuersation his workes with meekenes of wisedome.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the trueth.

15 This wisedome descendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, ||sensuall, deuilish. || *Or, natural*

16 For where enuying and strife is, there is †confusion, and euery euill worke. † *Gr. tumult or vnquietnesse.*

17 But the wisedome that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be intreated, full of mercy, and good fruits, ||without partialitie, and without hypocrisie. || *Or, without wrangling.*

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Wee are to striue against couetousnesse, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction, and rash iudgement of others: 13 and not to bee confident in the good successe of worldly businesse, but mindfull euer of the vncertaintie of this life, to commit our selues, and all our affaires to Gods prouidence.

FRom whence come warres and ||fightings among you? come they not hence, euen of your ||lusts, that warre in your members? || *Or, brawlings.* || *Or, pleasures.*

2 Ye lust, and haue not: yee kill, and desire to haue, and cannot obtaine: yee fight and warre, yet yee haue not, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that yee may consume it vpon your ||lusts. || *Or, pleasures.*

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know yee not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoeuer therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, the spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth ||to enuy? || *Or, enuiously.*

6 But he giueth more grace, wherefore he saith, *God resisteth the proude, but giueth grace vnto the humble. *Pro. 3. 34. 1. pet. 5. 5.

7 Submit your selues therefore to God: resist the deuill, and hee will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and hee will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands ye sinners, and purifie your hearts yee double minded.

9 Bee afflicted, and mourne, and weepe: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your ioy to heauinesse.

10 Humble your selues in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another (brethren:) he that speaketh euill of his brother, and iudgeth his brother, speaketh euill of the Law, and iudgeth the Law: but if thou iudge the Law, thou art not a doer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, who is able to saue, and to destroy: who art thou that iudgest another?

13 Goe to now ye that say, To day or to morrow wee will goe into such a city and continue there a yere, and buy, and sell, and get gaine:

*Pro. 27. 1. 14 Whereas yee know not what *shalbe* on the morow: *for what is your life? ||It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a litle time, and then vanisheth away. || *Or, for it is.*

15 For that yee ought to say, if the Lord will, we shall liue, and doe this, or that.

16 But now yee reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to doe good, and doth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 Wicked rich men are to feare Gods vengeance. 7 We ought to be patient in afflictions, after the example of the Prophets, and Iob: 12 to forbeare swearing, 13 to pray in aduersitie, to sing in prosperitie: 16 to acknowledge mutually our seueral faults, to pray one for another, 19 and to reduce a straying brother to the trueth.

GOe to now, yee rich men, weepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments motheaten:

3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shall bee a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh as it were fire: ye haue heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Beholde, the hire of the labourers which haue reaped downe your fieldes, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Yee haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and bene wanton: ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter:

6 Yee haue condemned, *and* killed

the iust, *and* he doth not resist you.

7 ||Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill hee receiue the early and latter raine.

|| *Or, be long patient, or suffer with long patience*

8 Be yee also patient; stablish your hearts: for the comming of the Lorde draweth nigh.

9 ||Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the Iudge standeth before the doore.

|| *Or, groane, or grieue not.*

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets, who haue spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Beholde, wee count them happie which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue seene the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercie.

12 But aboue all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heauen, neither by the earth, neither by any other othe: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay: lest yee fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is any sicke among you? let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray ouer him, anointing him with oyle in the Name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of Faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if hee haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that yee may bee healed: the effectuall feruent prayer of a righteous man auaileth much.

17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed ||earnestly that it might not raine: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeeres and sixe monethes.

|| *Or, in his prayer.*

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought foorth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the trueth, and one conuert him,

20 Let him know, that hee which conuerteth the sinner from the errour of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

THE

¶ THE FIRST generall of

CHAP. I.

Hee blesseth God for his manifold spirituall graces: 10 shewing that the saluation in Christ is no newes, but a thing prophesied of olde: 13 And exhorteth them accordingly to a godly conuersation, forasmuch as they are now borne anew by the word of God.

PEter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers scattred thorowout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect, according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit vnto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace vnto you and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his †abundant mercy, hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope, by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,

† *Gr. much.*

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and vndefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserued in heauen ‖for you,

‖ *Or, for vs.*

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith vnto saluation, ready to be reuealed in the last time.

6 Wherin ye greatly reioyce, though now for a season (if neede bee) yee are in heauinesse through manifolde temptations:

7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then of golde that perisheth, though it bee tryed with fire, might be found vnto praise, and honor, and glory, at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom hauing not seene, yee loue, in whom though now ye see *him* not, yet beleeuing, ye reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable, and full of glory,

9 Receiuing the ende of your faith, euen the saluation of your soules:
10 Of which saluation the Prophets haue inquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* vnto you,
11 Searching what, or what maner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified beforehand the suffrings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.
12 Vnto whome it was reuealed, that not vnto themselues, but vnto vs, they did minister the things which are now reported vnto you, by them that haue preached the Gospel vnto you, with the holy Ghost sent downe from heauen, which things the Angels desire to looke into.
13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your minde, bee sober, and hope †to the end, for the grace that is to bee brought vnto you at the reuelation of Iesus Christ: †*Gr. perfectly.*
14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues according to the former lusts, in your ignorance:
15 But as hee which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all maner of conuersation;
16 Because it is written, *Be ye holy, for I am holy. *Leuit. 11. 44. and 19. 2. and 20. 7.
17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of your soiourning here in feare:
18 For as much as ye know that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine conuersation *receiued* by tradition from your fathers;
19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish and without spot,
20 Who verily was foreordeined before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you:
21 Who by him do beleeue in God that

raised him vp from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing yee haue purified your soules in obeying the truth through the Spirit, vnto vnfained loue of the brethren: see that ye loue one another with a pure heart feruently,

23 Being borne againe, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liueth and abideth for euer.

|| *Or, for that*

24 ||For all flesh *is* as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flowre of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flowre thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: & this is the word which by the Gospel is preached vnto you.

CHAP. II.

He dehorteth them from the breach of charitie: 4 shewing that Christ is the foūdation wherupon they are built. 11 He beseecheth them also to abstaine from fleshly lustes, 13 To bee obedient to magistrates, 18 and teacheth seruants how to obey their masters, 20 patiently suffering for well doing after the example of Christ.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and enuies, and euill speakings,

2 As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby,

3 If so bee yee haue tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom comming *as* vnto a liuing Stone, disallowed in deed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

|| *Or, be ye built.*

5 Ye also as liuely stones, ||are built vp a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

*Esa. 28. 16
psa. 118. 22
mat. 21. 42
actes 4. 12.

6 Wherefore it is conteined in the Scripture, *Beholde, I lay in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect, precious, and he that beleeueth on him, shall not be confounded.

|| *Or, he is an honour.*

7 Vnto you therfore which beleeue hee is ||precious; but vnto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

*Esa. 8. 14.

8 *And a Stone of stumbling, and a Rocke of offence, *euen to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But yee are a chosen generation, a royall Priesthood, an holy nation, a ||peculiar people, that yee should shewe forth the ||praises of him, who hath called you out of darknes into his marueilous light:

|| *Or, a purchased people.*
|| *Or, vertues*

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: *which had not obteined mercie, but now haue obteined mercy.

*Ose. 2. 23.

11 Dearely beloued, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrimes, abstaine from fleshly lusts, which warre against the soule,

12 Hauing your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that ||whereas they speake against you as euill doers, they may by *your* good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

|| *Or, wherin.*

13 Submit your selues to euery ordinance of man for the Lordes sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme,

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent by him, for the punishment of euil doers, and for the praise of them that doe well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing yee may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not †vsing your libertie for a cloake of maliciousnesse, but as the seruants of God.

† *Gr. hauing*

17 ||Honour all men. Loue the brotherhood. Feare God. Honour the King.

|| *Or, esteeme.*

18 Seruants, be subiect to your masters with al feare, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thanke-worthie, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when yee be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently: but if when yee doe well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is ||acceptable with God.

|| *Or, thanke.*

21 For euen hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for ||vs, leauing vs an example, that yee should follow his steps.

|| Some reade, *for you.*

22 Who did no sinne, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not againe; when hee suffered, hee threatned not, but ||committed *himselfe* to him that iudgeth righteously.

|| *Or, committed* his cause.

24 Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne body ||on the tree,

|| *Or, to.*

that wee being dead to sinnes, should liue vnto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.

25 For yee were as sheepe going astray, but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP. III.

1 Hee teacheth the duetie of wiues and husbands to each other, 8 exhorting all men to vnitie, and loue, 14 and to suffer persecution. 19 Hee declareth also the benefits of Christ toward the old world.

Likewise, ye wiues, be in subiection to your owne husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be wonne by the conuersation of the wiues:

2 While they beholde your chaste conuersation *coupled* with feare:

3 Whose adorning, let it not bee that outward *adorning*, of plaiting the haire, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparell.

4 But *let it bee* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *euen the ornament* of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the olde time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselues, beeing in subiection vnto their owne husbands.

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whose †daughters ye are as long as ye doe well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

† *Gr. children.*

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwel with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife as vnto the weaker vessel, and as being heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally *be ye* all of one minde, hauing compassion one of another, ||loue as brethren, be pitifull, be courteous,

|| *Or, louing to the brethren.*

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or railing for railing: but contrarywise blessing, knowing that yee are thereunto called, that ye should inherite a blessing.

10 For hee that will loue life, and see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euil, and his *lips that they speake no guile:

*Psal. 34. 13.

11 Let him eschew euil and do good, let him seeke peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares are *open* vnto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* †against them that doe euill. † *Gr. vpon.*

13 And who is hee that will harme you, if ye bee followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousnes sake, happy *are ye*, and be not *afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled: * Esa. 8. 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, & *be* ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenesse and ||feare: || *Or, reuerence.*

16 Hauing a good conscience, that whereas they speake euill of you, as of euill doers, they may bee ashamed that falsly accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that yee suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

19 By which also he went and preached vnto the spirits in prison,

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the Arke was a preparing: wherein few, that is, eight soules were saued by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, euen Baptisme, doth also now saue vs, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answere of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ.

22 Who is gone into heauen, and is on the right hand of God, Angels, and authorities, and powers being made subiect vnto him.

CHAP. IIII.

Hee exhorteth them to cease from sinne by the example of Christ, and the consideration of the generall end, that now approcheth: 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

FOr asmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde: for hee that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceassed from sinne:

2 That he no longer should liue the rest of *his* time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice vs to haue wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciuiousnes, lusts, excesse of wine, reuellings, banquetings, and abhominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they thinke it strange, that you runne not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking euil of you:

5 Who shal giue accompt to him that is ready to iudge the quicke & the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might bee iudged according to men in the flesh, but liue according to God in the spirit.

7 But the ende of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober and watch vnto prayer.

8 And aboue all things haue feruent charitie among your selues: for charity ||shall couer the multitude of sinnes.

|| *Or, will.*

9 Vse hospitalitie one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gift, *euen so* minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as of the ability which God giueth, that God in all things may bee glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you.

13 But reioyce in as much as yee are partakers of Christes sufferings; that when his glory shalbe reueiled, ye may be glad also with exceeding ioy.

14 If ye be reproched for the Name of Christ, happie *are ye*, for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you: on their part hee is euill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or as a theefe, or as an euill doer, or as a busibody in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any *man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.

17 For the time is *come* that iudge-

ment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at vs, what shall the ende bee of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherfore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth the Elders to feede their flocks, 5 the yonger to obey, 8 and all to bee sober, watchfull, and constant in the faith: 9 to resist the cruell aduersarie the deuill.

THe Elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be reuealed.

2 Feede the flocke of God ||which is among you, taking the ouersight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde:

|| *Or, as much as in you is.*

3 Neither as ||being lords ouer *Gods* heritage: but being ensamples to the flocke.

|| *Or, ouerruling.*

4 And when the chiefe shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receiue a crowne of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the elder: yea, all *of you* bee subiect one to another, and bee clothed with humilitie: for God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the mighty hand of God, that hee may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care vpon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your aduersary the deuill, as a roaring Lion walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace who hath called vs into his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him bee glory and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 By Syluanus a faithfull brother

vnto you, (as I suppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting, & testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon

¶ THE SECOND generall of

CHAP. I.

1 Confirming them in hope of the increase of Gods graces, 5 he exhorteth them by faith, and good workes, to make their calling sure: 12 Whereof hee is carefull to remember them, knowing that his death is at hand: 16 And warneth them to be constant in the faith of Christ, who is the true Sonne of God, by the eye witnesse of the Apostles beholding his Maiestie, and by the testimonie of the Father, and the Prophets.

SImon Peter, a seruant & an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to them that haue obtained like precious Faith with vs, through the righteousnes of God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

2 Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you through the knowledge of God, and of Iesus our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that *pertaine* vnto life and godlines, through the knowledge of him that hath called vs ||to glory and vertue.

|| *Or, by.*

4 Whereby are giuen vnto vs exceeding great and precious promises, that by these you might bee partakers of the diuine nature, hauing escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giuing all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;

elected, together with you, saluteth you, and *so doth* Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete yee one another with a kisse of charity: Peace bee with you all that are in Christ Iesus. Amen.

EPISTLE

Peter.

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charitie.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that yee shall neither be barren, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 But hee that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherefore, the rather, brethren, giue diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye doe these things, ye shall neuer fall.

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred vnto you abundantly, into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I wil not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, though yee know them, and be stablished in the present trueth.

13 Yea, I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my Tabernacle,
euen as *our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed mee. *Ioh. 21.

15 Moreouer, I will endeuour, that you may bee able after 17
my decease, to haue these things alwayes in remembrance.

16 For wee haue not followed cunningly deuised fables, when wee made knowen vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his Maiestie.

17 For hee receiued from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excel-

lent glory, This is my beloued Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heauen wee heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We haue also a more sure word of prophecie, whereunto yee doe well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any priuate Interpretation:

|| *Or, at any time.*

21 For the prophecie came not ||in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the impietie, and punishment both of them and their followers: 7 from which the godly shall bee deliuered, as Lot was out of Sodom: 10 and more fully describeth the manners of those prophane, and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better knowen, and auoided.

BVt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shall bee false teachers among you, who priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord that bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift destruction.

|| *Or, lasciuious wayes*, as some copies reade.

2 And many shall follow their ||pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of trueth shall be euill spoken of:

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained words, make marchandise of you, whose iudgement now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them downe to hell, *and* deliuered them into chaines of darkenesse, to be reserued vnto iudgment:

5 And spared not the old world, but saued Noah the eight *person* a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes, condemned them with an ouerthrowe, making them an ensample vnto those that after should liue vngodly:

7 And deliuered iust Lot, vexed

with the filthy conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing & hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, with *their* vnlawfull deeds.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuer the godly out of temptations, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh in the lust of vncleannesse, and despise ||gouernment. Presumptuous *are they;* selfe willed: they are not afraid to speake euill of dignities:

|| *Or, dominion.*
*Iude 8. 8.

11 Whereas Angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation ||against them before the Lord.

|| Some read *against themselues.*

12 But these, as natural bruit beasts made to bee taken and destroyed speake euill of the things that they vnderstand not, *and* shall vtterly perish in their owne corruption,

13 *And* shall receiue the reward of vnrighteousnesse, *as* they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: Spots *they are* and blemishes, sporting themselues with their owne deceiuings, while they feast with you:

14 Hauing eyes ful of †adulterie and that cannot cease from sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: an heart they haue exercised with couetous practises: cursed children:

† *Gr. an adulteresse.*

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam *the sonne* of Bosor, who loued the wages of vnrighteousnesse,

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumbe asse speaking with mans voice, forbade the madnesse of the Prophet.

17 These are welles without water, cloudes that are caried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darkenesse is reserued for euer.

18 For when they speake great swelling words of vanitie, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnesse, those that were ||cleane escaped from them who liue in errour.

|| *Or, for a litle, or a while as some read.*

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselues are the seruants of corruption: for of whom a man is ouercome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they haue escaped the

pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, they are againe intangled therein, *and* ouercome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had bin better for them not to haue knowen the way of righteousnesse, then after they haue knowen it, to turne from the holy commandement deliuered vnto them.

22 But it is happened vnto them according to the true prouerbe: The dog is turned to his own vomit againe, and the sowe that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

Hee assureth them of the certaintie of Christes comming to Iudgement, against those scorners who dispute against it: 8 warning the godly for the long patience of God, to hasten their repentance. 10 He describeth also the manner how the world shall bee destroyed: 11 exhorting them from the expectation thereof, to all holinesse of life: 15 And againe, to thinke the patience of God to tend to their saluation, as Paul wrote to them in his Epistles.

THis second Epistle (beloued) I now write vnto you, in both which I stir vp your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That yee may be mindfull of the wordes which were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the Commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their owne lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were frō the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heauens were of olde, and the earth †standing out of the water, and in the water,

† *Gr. consisting.*

6 Whereby the world that then was, being ouerflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heauens and the earth which are now, by the

same word are

kept in store, reserued vnto fire against the day of Iudgement, and perdition of vngodly men.

8 But (beloued) bee not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lord is not slacke cōcerning his promise (as some men count slacknesse) but is long-suffring to vs-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord wil come as a thiefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a great noise, and the Elements shall melt with feruent heate, the earth also and the works that are therin shalbe burnt vp.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolued, What maner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conuersation, and godlinesse,

12 ||Looking for and hasting vnto the comming of the day of God, wherein the heauens being on fire shalbe dissolued, and the Elements shall melt with feruent heat.

|| Or, *hasting the comming.*

13 Neuerthelesse wee, according to his promise, looke for new heauens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloued) seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long suffering of the Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul also, according to the wisedome giuen vnto him, hath written vnto you.

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable wrest, as they doe also the other Scriptures, vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloued, seeing yee know *these things* before, beware lest yee also being led away with the errour of the wicked, fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But growe in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for euer. Amen.

THE

¶ THE FIRST generall of

CHAP. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, in whome we haue eternal life, by a cōmunion with God: 5 to which we must adioine holinesse of life, to testifie the trueth of that our communion and profession of faith, as also to assure vs of the forgiuenesse of our sinnes by Christs death.

THat which was from yͤ beginning, which wee haue heard, which wee haue seene with our eyes, which wee haue looked vpon, and our hands haue handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifested, and we haue seene it, and beare witnes, and shew vnto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested vnto vs.)

3 That which wee haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that ye also may haue felowship with vs; and truely our fellowship *is* with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkenesse at all.

6 If we say that we haue felowship with him, and walke in darkenesse, we lie, and doe not the trueth.

7 But if wee walke in the light, as he is in the light, wee haue fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne clenseth vs from all sinne.

8 If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues, and the trueth is not in vs.

9 If we confesse our sinnes, hee is faithfull, & iust to forgiue vs our sinnes,

EPISTLE
Iohn.

and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnesse.

10 If we say that we haue not sinned, wee make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

1 He comforteth them against the sinnes of infirmitie. 3 Rightly to know God, is to keepe his commaundements, 9 to loue our brethren, 15 and not to loue the world. 18 We must beware of seducers: 20 from whose deceits the godly are safe preserued by perseuerance in faith, and holinesse of life.

MY little children, these things write I vnto you, that ye sinne not. And if any man sinne, we haue an Aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the righteous:

2 And he is the propitiation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes of the whole world.

3 And hereby wee doe knowe that we know him, if we keepe his commandements.

4 He that saith, I knowe him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a lyer, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But who so keepeth his word, in him verely is the loue of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that sayeth he abideth in him, ought himselfe also so to walke, euen as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you, but an olde commandement which ye had from the beginning: the old commandement is the word which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darkenesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and

hateth his brother, is in darkenesse euen vntill now.

10 Hee that loueth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of †stumbling in him.

† *Gr. scandall*

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, and knoweth not whither hee goeth, because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write vnto you, little children, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, because yee haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, young men, because you haue ouercome the wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, because yee haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him *that is* from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, because yee are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and yee haue ouercome the wicked one.

15 Loue not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loue the world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof, but hee that doeth the will of God, abideth for euer.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen now are there many Antichrists, whereby wee know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had beene of vs, they would no doubt haue continued with vs: but *they went out* that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an vnction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because yee know not the trueth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lier, but hee that denieth that Iesus is the Christ? hee is Antichrist, that denyeth the Father, and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father: *but he that acknowledgeth the Sonne, hath the Father also.*

24 Let that therefore abide in you which yee haue heard from the beginning: if that which ye haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, yee also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that hee hath promised vs, *euen* eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye haue receiued of him, abideth in you: and yee need not that any man teach you: But, as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is trueth, and is no lye: and euen as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in ||him. || *Or, it.*

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when hee shall appeare, wee may haue confidence, and not bee ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ||ye know that euery one which doeth righteousnesse, is borne of him. || *Or, know ye*

CHAP. III.

Hee declareth the singular loue of God towards vs, in making vs his sonnes: 3 Who therefore ought obediently to keepe his commaundements, 11 As also brotherly to loue one another.

BEholde, what manner of loue the Father hath bestowed vpon vs, that wee should be called the sonnes of God: therfore the world knoweth vs not, because it knewe him not.

2 Beloued, now are we the sonnes of God, and it doeth not yet appeare, what wee shall be: but wee know, that when he shall appeare, we shall bee like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the lawe: for sinne is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that hee was manifested to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoeuer abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoeuer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither knowen him.

7 Little children, let no man deceiue you: he that doth righteousnes, is righteous, euen as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the deuill, for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Sonne of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the deuill.

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, doth not commit sinne: for his seede remaineth in him, and he cannot sinne, because he is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the deuill: whosoeuer doeth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither hee that loueth not his brother.

|| *Or, commandement.*

11 For this is the ||message that yee heard from the beginning, that wee should loue one another.

12 Not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and slewe his brother: and wherefore slewe hee him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marueile not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 Wee know that wee haue passed from death vnto life, because wee loue the brethren: he that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a murtherer, and yee knowe that no murtherer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceiue wee the loue of God, because he layd downe his life for vs, and wee ought to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother hath need, and shutteth vp his bowels of compassion from him; how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My little children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue, but indeede and in trueth.

† *Gr, perswade.*

19 And hereby wee know that wee are of the trueth, and shall †assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, *then* haue wee confidence towards God.

22 And whatsoeuer we aske, wee receiue of him, because we keepe his commandement, and doe those things that

are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandement, that we should beleeue on the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as hee gaue vs commandement.

24 And hee that keepeth his commandements dwelleth in him, and hee in him: and hereby wee know that hee abideth in vs, by the spirit which hee hath giuen vs.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He warneth them not to beleeue all teachers, who boast of the spirit, but to try them by the rules of the Catholike faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth to brotherly loue.

BEloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but trie the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the spirit of God: euery spirit that confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery Spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of Antichrist, whereof you haue heard, that it should come, and euen now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and haue ouercome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: hee that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God heareth not vs, hereby know wee the spirit of trueth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another; for loue is of God: and euery one that loueth, is borne of God and knoweth God.

8 Hee that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

9 In this was manifested the loue of God towards vs, because that God sent his only begotten Sonne into the world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that wee loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne to be ẏͤ propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, wee ought also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any

time. If wee loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfected in vs.

13 Hereby know wee that we dwell in him and he in vs, because hee hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent the Sonne *to be* the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer shall confesse that Iesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen and beleeued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and hee that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is †our loue made perfect, that wee may haue boldnesse in the day of Iudgement, because as hee is, so are we in this world.

†*Gr. loue with vs.*

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: because feare hath torment: hee that feareth, is not made perfect in loue.

19 We loue him: because hee first loued vs.

20 If a man say, I loue God, and hateth his brother, he is a lyar. For hee that loueth not his brother whom hee hath seene, how can he loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 And this commandement haue we from him, that he who loueth God, loue his brother also.

CHAP. V.

Hee that loueth God, loueth his children, and keepeth his Commandements: 3 which to the faithful are light, and not grieuous. 9 Iesus is the Sonne of God, able to saue vs, 14 and to heare our prayers, which we make for our selues, and for others.

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is the Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him that begate, loueth him also that is begotten of him.

2 By this wee know that wee loue the children of God, when we loue God and keepe his commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commandements, and his commandements are not grieuous.

4 For whatsoeuer is borne of God, ouercommeth the world, and this is the victorie that ouercommeth the world, euen our faith.

5 Who is he that ouercommeth the

world, but he that beleeueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God?

6 This is hee that came by water and blood, euen Iesus Christ, not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three that beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that beare witnesse in earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which hee hath testified of his Sonne.

10 Hee that beleeueth on the Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeueth not the record that God gaue of his Sonne.

11 And this is the record, that God hath giuen to vs eternall life, and this life is in his Sonne.

12 Hee that hath the Sonne, hath life; and hee that hath not the Sonne, hath not life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you that beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God, that ye may know, that ye haue eternall life, and that yee may beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God.

14 And this is the confidence that we haue ||in him, that if wee aske any thing according to his will, hee heareth vs.

|| *Or, concerning him.*

15 And if we know that he heare vs, whatsoeuer wee aske, wee know that we haue the petitions that wee desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne *which is* not vnto death, hee shall aske, and he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I doe not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnes is sinne, and there is a sinne not vnto death.

18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but hee that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Sonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs an vnderstanding that wee may know him that is true: and wee are in him that is

¶ The second

Hee exhorteth a certaine honourable matrone, with her children, to perseuere in Christian loue, and beliefe, 8 lest they lose the reward of their former profession: 10 And to haue nothing to doe with those seducers that bring not the true doctrine of Christ Iesus.

THe Elder vnto the elect Lady, and her children, whome I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but also all they that haue knowen ẏͤ trueth:

2 For the trueths sake which dwelleth in vs, and shalbe with vs for euer:

3 Grace bee with you, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ, the Sonne of the Father in trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in trueth, as wee haue receiued a commaundement from the Father.

5 And now, I beseech thee Lady, not as though I wrote a new commandement vnto thee: but that which wee had from the beginning, that wee loue one another.

6 And this is loue, that wee walke after his Commandements. This is

¶ The third

Hee commendeth Gaius for his pietie 5 and hospitalitie 7 to true preachers: 9 Complaining of the vnkind dealing of ambitious Diotrephes on the contrary side: 11 Whose euill example is not to bee followed: 12 And giueth speciall testimonie to the good report of Demetrius.

|| *Or, truely.*

THe Elder vnto the welbeloued Gaius, whom I loue ||in the trueth:

|| *Or, pray.*

2 Beloued, I ||wish aboue all things that thou

true, *euen* in his Sonne Iesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.
21 Little children, keepe your selues from Idoles. Amen.

Epistle of Iohn.

the Commandement, that as yee haue heard from the beginning, yee should walke in it.
7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiuer, and an Antichrist.
8 Looke to your selues, that wee lose not those things which wee haue ||wrought, but that we receiue a full reward.
9 Whosoeuer transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: hee that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.
10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not into your house, neither bid him, God speed.
11 For hee that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his euill deeds.
12 Hauing many things to write vnto you, I would not write with paper and inke, but I trust to come vnto you, and speake †face to face, that our ioy may be full.
13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

|| *Or, gained.* Some copies *reade, which yee haue gained, but that ye receiue, &c.*

† *Gr. mouth to mouth.*

Epistle of Iohn.

mayest prosper and be in health, euen as thy soule prospereth.
3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, euen as thou walkest in the trueth.
4 I haue no greater ioy, then to heare that my children walke in truth.
5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully whatsoeuer thou doest to the Brethren, and to strangers:
6 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charitie before the Church: whome if thou

thou bring forward on their iourney after a godly sort, thou shalt doe well:

7 Because that for his Names sake they went foorth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be fellow helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church, but Diotrephes, who loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against vs with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth hee himselfe receiue the brethren,

¶ THE Epistle

Hee exhorteth them to bee constant in the profession of the faith. 14 False teachers are crept in to seduce them: for whose damnable doctrine and manners horrible punishment is prepared: 20 Whereas the godly, by the assistance of the holy Spirit, and prayers to God, may perseuere, and grow in grace, and keepe themselues, and recouer others out of the snares of those deceiuers.

IVde the seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserued in Iesus Christ, & called:

2 Mercie vnto you, and peace, and loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation: it was needfull for mee to write vnto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once deliuered vnto the Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in

and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but hee that doth euill, hath not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the trueth it selfe: yea, and we *also* beare record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with inke and pen write vnto thee.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and wee shall speake †face to face. Peace bee to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name. †*Gr. mouth to mouth.*

GENERALL of Iude.

vnawares, who were before of olde ordained to this condemnation, vngodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciuiousnesse, and denying the onely Lord God, & our Lord Iesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord hauing saued the people out of the land of Egypt afterward destroied them that beleeued not.

6 And the Angels which kept not their ‖first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darkenesse, vnto the iudgement of the great day. ‖*Or, principalitie.*

7 Euen as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like maner giuing themselues ouer to fornication, and going after †strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffring the vengeance of eternall fire. †*Gr. other.*

8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speake euill of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when contending with the deuill, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, *The Lord rebuke thee. *Zac. 3. 2.

10 But these speake euill of those things, which they know not: but what they knowe naturally, as brute beastes, in those things they corrupt themselues.

11 Wo vnto them, for they haue gone in the way of Kain, and ranne greedily after the errour of Balaam, for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

12 These are spottes in your feasts of charitie, when they feast with you, feeding themselues without feare: cloudes they are without water, caried about of winds, trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twise dead, plucked vp by the rootes.

13 Raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame, wandring stars, to whom is reserued the blacknesse of darkenesse for euer.

14 And Enoch also, the seuenth from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord commeth with ten thousands of his Saints,

15 To execute iudgement vpon all, and to conuince all that are vngodly among them, of all their vngodly deeds which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their heard *speaches*, which vngodly sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lustes, and their mouth speaketh great swelling wordes, hauing mens persons in admiration because of aduantage.

17 But beloued, remember yee the words, which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ:

18 *How* that they tolde you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walke after their own vngodly lustes.

19 These be they who separate themselues, sensual, hauing not the spirit.

20 But yee beloued, building vp your selues on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ vnto eternall life.

22 And of some haue compassion, making a difference:

23 And others saue with feare, pulling them out of the fire: hating euen the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding ioy,

25 To the onely wise God our Sauiour, be glory and maiestie, dominion and power, now and euer. Amen.

¶ THE

¶ THE
# of S. Iohn

CHAP. I.

4 Iohn writeth his reuelation to the seuen Churches of Asia, signified by the seuen golden Candlestickes. 7 The comming of Christ. 14 His glorious power and maiestie.

THe Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which GOD gaue vnto him, to shewe vnto his seruants things which must shortly come to passe; and he sent and signified *it* by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn,

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed is hee that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophesie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn to the seuen Churches in Asia, Grace *be* vnto you,
*Exo. 3. 14. & peace, from him *which is, and which was, and which is
to come, and from the seuen spirits which are before his
throne:

5 And from Iesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witnesse, and
*1. Cor. 15. 21. coloss. 1. 18. the *first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings
of the earth: vnto him that loued vs, *and washed vs from
*Heb. 9. 14 our sinnes in his owne blood,

6 And hath *made vs Kings and Priests vnto God and his
*1. Pet. 2. 5 Father: to him be glory and dominion for euer and euer,
Amen.

*Matt. 24. 30. 7 *Behold he commeth with clouds, and euery eye shal see
him, and they also which pearced him: and all kinreds of
the earth shall waile because of him: euen so. Amen.

REVELATION
the Diuine.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

9 I Iohn, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the Isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and what thou seest, write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamos, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with mee. And being turned, I saw seuen golden Candlesticks,

13 And in the midst of the seuen candlestickes, *one* like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and his haires were white like wooll, as white as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feet like vnto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And hee had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his countenance was as the Sunne shineth in his strength.

17 And when I sawe him, I fell at his feete as dead: and hee laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto mee, Feare not, *I am the first, and the last.

18 I am hee that liueth, and was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore,

* Esay. 41. 4. and 44. 6

more, Amen, and haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter,

20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden Candlestickes. The seuen Starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlestickes which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

CHAP. II.

What is commaunded to bee written to the Angels, that is, the Ministers of the Churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamus, 18 Thyatira: and what is commended, or found wanting in them.

VNto the Angel of the church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seuen golden Candlesticks:

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare them which are euil, and thou hast tried them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them lyers:

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuerthelesse, I haue *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therfore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, and will remoue thy Candlesticke out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches: To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eate of the tree of life, which is in the middest of the Paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is aliue,

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and pouertie, but thou art rich,

and I know the blasphemie of them which say they are Iewes and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the deuill shal cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and yee shall haue tribulation tenne dayes: bee thou faithfull vnto death, and I will giue thee a crowne of life.

11 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the spirit saith vnto the churches. He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the Angel of the Church in Pergamos, write, These things saith hee, which hath the sharpe sword with two edges:

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans seat is, and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not denied my faith, euen in those daies, wherein Antipas *was* my faithful Martyr, who was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that holde the doctrine of *Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, to eate things sacrificed vnto idoles, and to commit fornication.

*Num. 25.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, and wil fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eate of the hidden Manna, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, sauing hee that receiueth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Sonne of God, who hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete *are* like fine brasse:

19 I know thy works, and charitie, and seruice, and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and the last *to bee* more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman *Iezebel, which calleth herselfe a Prophetesse, to teach and

*1. Kin. 16. 31.

to seduce my seruants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

*Iere. 11. 20. and 17. 10.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the Churches shall know that *I am hee which searcheth the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according to your workes.

24 But vnto you I say, and vnto the rest in Thyatira, as many as haue not this doctrine, and which haue not knowen the depthes of Satan, as they speake, I will put vpon you none other burden:

25 But that which ye haue already, hold fast till I come.

26 And hee that ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer the nations:

*Psal. 2. 9.

27 (*And he shall rule them with a rod of yron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shiuers:) euen as I receiued of my Father.

28 And I will giue him the morning starre.

29 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. III.

2 The Angel of the Church of Sardis is reproued, 3 exhorted to repent, and threatned if hee doe not repent. 8 The Angel of the Church of Philadelphia 10 is approoued for his diligence and patience. 15 The Angel of Laodicea rebuked, for being neither hote nor colde, 19 and admonished to be more zealous. 20 Christ standeth at the doore, and knocketh.

AND vnto the Angel of the Church in Sardis write, These things saith he that hath the seuen Spirits of God, & the seuen starres; I know thy workes, that thou hast a name that thou liuest, and art dead.

2 Be watchfull, and strengthen the things which remaine, that are ready to die: for I haue not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore, how thou hast receiued and heard, and hold fast,

and repent. *If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

*1. Thess. 5. 2. 2. pet. 3. 10.

4 Thou hast a few names euen in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 Hee that ouercommeth, the same shalbe clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the *booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels.

*Chap. 20. 12. phil. 4. 3.

6 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

7 And to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write, These things saith he that is Holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of Dauid, he that openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy workes: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but doe lie: behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feete, and to know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keepe thee from the houre of temptation, which shall come vpon all the world, to try them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Beholde, I come quickly, hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I wil write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the Citie of my God, *which is* new Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God: And *I will write vpon him* my New name.

13 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church ||of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creation of God:

|| Or, *in Laodicea.*

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither cold nor hot, I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarme, and neither cold nor hot, I wil spew thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue need of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest bee rich, and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse doe not appeare, and anoint thine eyes with eye salue, that thou mayest see.

*Prou. 3. 11. hebr. 12. 5.

19 *As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore, and knocke: if any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that ouercommeth, will I graunt to sit with mee in my throne, euen as I also ouercame, and am set downe with my Father in his throne.

22 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

2 Iohn seeth the throne of God in heauen. 4 The foure and twentie Elders. 6 The foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde. 10 The Elders lay downe their crownes, and worship him that sate on the Throne.

AFter this I looked, and beholde, a doore was opened in heauen: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with me, which said, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was in the spirit: and beholde, a Throne was set in heauen, and *one* sate on the Throne.

3 And he that sate was to looke vpon like a Iasper, and a Sardine stone: and there was a rainebow round about the Throne, in sight like vnto an Emeralde.

4 And round about the Throne were foure and twentie seates, and vpon the seates I saw foure and twentie Elders

sitting, clothed in white rayment, and they had on their heades crownes of golde.

5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces: and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the Throne, which are the seuen Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto Chrystall: and in the middest of the throne, and round about the Throne, were foure beastes full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast was like a Lion, and the second beast like a Calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Egle.

8 And the foure beasts had each of them sixe wings about
him, and they were full of eyes within, and they †rest not †*Gr. they*
day and night, saying, *Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, *haue no rest.*
which was, and is, and is to come. *Esai. 6.3.

9 And when those beasts giue glory, and honour, and thankes to him that sate on the Throne, who liueth for euer and euer,

10 The foure and twentie Elders fall downe before him that sate on the Throne, and worship him that liueth for euer and euer, and cast their crownes before the Throne, saying,

11 *Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receiue glorie, and honour, *Chap. 5.
and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy 12.
pleasure they are, and were created.

CHAP. V.

1 The booke sealed with seuen seales: 9 which only the lamb that was slain is worthy to opē. 12 Therfore the Elders praise him, 9 and confesse that he redeemed them with his blood.

AND I saw in yͤ right hand of him that sate on the Throne, a booke written within, & on the backeside, sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I saw a strong Angel proclaiming with a loude voice; Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And

*Gen. 49. 9

5 And one of the Elders saith vnto me, Weepe not: beholde, *the Lion of the tribe of Iuda, the roote of Dauid, hath preuailed to open the booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof.

6 And I beheld, and loe, in the middest of the Throne, and of the foure beastes, and in the midst of the Elders stood a Lambe as it had beene slaine, hauing seuen hornes and seuen eyes, which are the seuen Spirits of God, sent foorth into all the earth.

7 And he came, and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the Throne.

8 And when he had taken the booke, the foure Beasts, and foure and twenty Elders fel down before the Lambe, hauing euery one of them harps, and golden vials full of ||odours, which are the prayers of Saints.

|| *Or, incense.*

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the seales thereof: for thou wast slaine, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery kinred, and tongue, and people, and nation:

*1. Pet. 2. 9.

10 *And hast made vs vnto our God Kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels, round about the Throne, and the beasts and the Elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times tenne thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying with a lowd voice, Worthy is the Lambe that was slaine, to receiue power, and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And euery creature which is in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power bee vnto him that sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer and euer.

14 And the foure beasts said, Amen. And the foure and twenty Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euer and euer.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seales in order, and what followed thereupon, conteining a prophesie to the end of the world.

AND I sawe when the Lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the foure beastes, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and hee that sate on him had a bowe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and hee went foorth conquering, and to conquere.

3 And when hee had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was giuen to him that sate thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when hee had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse: and hee that sate on him had a paire of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the foure beastes say, ||A measure of wheate for a penie, and three measures of barley for a penie, and see thou hurt not the oyle and the wine.

7 And when hee had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, & his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was giuen ||vnto them, ouer the fourth part of the earth to kill with sword, & with hunger, and with death, and with the beastes of the earth.

9 And when hee had opened the fift seale, I saw vnder the altar, the soules of them that were slaine for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

10 And they cried with a lowd voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, doest thou not iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were giuen vnto euery one of them, and it was sayd vnto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, vntill their fellow seruants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixt seale, and loe, there was a great

|| *The word chœnix, signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.*

|| *Or, to him.*

great earthquake, and the Sunne became blacke as sackecloth of haire, and the Moone became as blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, euen as a figge tree casteth her ||vntimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty winde.

|| *Or. greene figs.*

*Esa. 34. 4

14 *And the heauen departed as a scrowle when it is rolled together, and euery mountaine and Island were moued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mighty men, and euery bondman, and euery free man, hid themselues in the dennes, and in the rockes of the mountaines,

*Luk. 23. 30.

16 And said to the mountaines and rockes, *Fall on vs, and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 An Angel sealeth the seruants of God in their foreheads. 4 The number of them that were sealed: of the tribes of Israel a certaine number. 9 Of all other nations an innumerable multitude, which stand before the Throne, clad in white robes, and palmes in their hands. 14 Their robes were washed in the blood of the Lambe.

AND after these things, I saw foure Angels standing on the foure corners of the Earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the winde should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel ascending from the East, hauing the seale of the liuing God: and he cried with a loud voice to the foure Angels to whom it was giuen to hurt the earth and the Sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till wee haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundreth and fourty and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of

the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nepthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Isachar were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could nūber, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, & tongues, stood before the throne, & before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loude voice, saying, Saluation to our God, which sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen : Blessing, and glorie, and wisedome, and thankesgiuing, and honour, & power, and might be vnto our God for euer & euer, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying vnto mee, What are these which are arayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple: and hee that sitteth on the Throne shal *dwell among them.

*Cha. 21. 3

16 *They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the Sunne light on them, nor any heate.

*Esa. 49. 10

17 For the Lambe, which is in the middest of the throne, shall feede them, and shall leade them vnto liuing fountaines of waters: *and God shal wipe away all teares from their eyes.

*Esa. 25. 8. chap. 21. 4.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seuenth seale, 2 seuen Angels had seuen Trumpets giuen them. 6 Foure of them sound their trumpets, and great plagues follow. 3 Another Angel putteth incense to the prayers of the Saints on the golden altar.

AND when hee had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about the space of halfe an houre.

2 And I sawe the seuen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angel came & stood at the altar, hauing a golden censer, and there was giuen vnto him much incense, that hee should ||offer it with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden altar which was before the throne.

|| *Or, adde it to the prayers.*

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the Saints, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voyces, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake:

6 And the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to sound.

7 The first Angel sounded, and there followed haile, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast vpon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt vp, and all greene grasse was burnt vp.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the thirde part of the creatures which were in the Sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampe, and it fell vpon the third part of the riuers, and vpon the fountaines of waters:

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormewood, and the third part of the waters became wormewood, and many men dyed of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded,

and the thirde part of the Sunne was smitten, & the third part of the Moone, and the third part of the starres, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying through the midst of heauen, saying with a loude voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voyces of the trumpet of the three Angels which are yet to sound

CHAP. IX.

1 At the sounding of the fift Angel, a starre falleth from heauen, to whome is giuen the key of the bottomles pit. 2 Hee openeth the pit, and there come foorth Locusts like Scorpions. 12 The first woe past. 13 The sixt Trumpet soundeth. 14 Foure Angels are let loose, that were bound.

AND the fift Angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth: and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And hee opened the bottomelesse pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great fornace, and the sunne and the ayre were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the Scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commaunded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but only those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was giuen that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented fiue moneths, and their torment was as the torment of a Scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those daies shal men seeke death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the Locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heades *were* as it were crownes like golde, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lions.

9 And they had brestplates, as it were brestplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of charets of many horses running to battell.

10 And they had tayles like vnto Scorpions, and there were stings in their tayles: and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greeke tongue hath his name ||Apollyon.

|| *That is to say, A destroyer.*

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixt Angel sounded, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of ẏͤ golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixt Angel which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared ||for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeere, for to slay the third part of men.

|| *Or, at.*

16 And the number of the armie of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I sawe the horses in the vision, and them that sate on them, hauing brest-plates of fire and of Iacinct, and brimstone, & the heades of the horses were as the heads of Lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, and with them they doe hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, *and idoles of golde, and siluer, and brasse, and stone, and of wood, which neither can see, nor heare, nor walke:

*Psal. 115. 4. & 135. 15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

A mightie strong Angel appeareth with a booke open in his hand. 6 Hee sweareth by him that liueth for euer, that there shall bee no more time. 9 Iohn is commanded to take and eate the booke.

AND I saw another mighty Angel come down from heauen, clothed with a cloud, and a rainebow *was* vpon his head, and his face *was* as it were the Sunne, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And hee had in his hand a little booke open: and hee set his right foote vpon the sea, and his left foote on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loude voice, as when a Lion roareth: and when hee had cried, seuen thunders vttered their voices.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heauen, saying vnto mee, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders vttered, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lifted vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euer and euer, who created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should bee time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seuenth Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mysterie of God should be finished, as hee hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heauen spake vnto me againe, and said, Go, and take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angel, and said vnto him, Giue me the little booke. And he sayd vnto me, *Take it, and eat it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall bee in thy mouth sweete as hony.

*Ezek. 2. 8. and 3. 3.

10 And I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth sweet as honie: and as soone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he sayd vnto me, Thou must prophesie againe before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

3 The two witnesses prophesie. 6 They haue power to shut heauen,
that it raine not. 7 The beast shall fight against them, and kill
them. 8 They lie vnburied, 11 and after three dayes and a halfe
rise againe. 14 The second woe is past. 15 The seuenth trumpet
soundeth.

ANd there was giuen me a reede like vnto a rod, and the Angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

† *Gr. cast out*

2 But the Court which is without the Temple †leaue out, and measure it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie shall they tread vnder foote fourty and two moneths.

|| *Or, I will giue vnto my two witnesses that they may prophesie.*

3 And ||I will giue *power* vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the *two oliue trees, and the two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth.

*Zach. 4. 3. & 11. 14.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and deuoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, hee must in this maner be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesie: and haue power ouer waters to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall haue finished their testimonie, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall *lie* in the street of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kinreds, and tongues, and nations, shal see their dead bodies three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shall reioyce ouer them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two Prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an halfe the Spirit of life from God, entred in-

to them: and they stood vpon their feete, and great feare fell vpon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slaine †of men seuen thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gaue glory to the God of heauen. † *Gr. names of men.*

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe commeth quickly.

15 And the seuenth Angel sounded, and there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are become *the kingdomes* of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reigne for euer and euer.

16 And the foure and twentie Elders which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, Wee giue thee thankes, O Lord God Almightie, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should bee iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, & them that feare thy Name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which ||destroy the earth. || *Or, corrupt*

19 And the Temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his Testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman clothed with the Sunne trauaileth. 4 The great red dragon standeth before her, ready to deuoure her child: 6 when she was deliuered she fleeth into the wildernes. 7 Michael and his Angels fight with the dragon, and preuaile. 13 The dragon being cast down into the earth, persecuteth the woman.

AND there appeared a great ||wonder in heauen, a woman clothed with the Sunne, & the Moone vnder her feete, and vpon || *Or, signe.*

her head a Crowne of twelue starres:

2 And shee being with childe, cried, trauailing in birth, and pained to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another ||wonder in heauen, and behold a great red dragon, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

|| *Or, signe.*

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and did cast them to the earth: And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuoure her childe as soone as it was borne.

5 And shee brought foorth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her child was caught vp vnto God, and to his Throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where shee hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand, two hundred, and threescore dayes.

7 And there was warre in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, & the dragon fought and his angels,

8 And preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, which deceiueth the whole world: hee was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a lowd voyce saying in heauen, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they ouercame him by the blood of the Lambe, and by the word of their Testimony, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, yee heauens, and yee that dwell in them; Woe to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, hauing great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which brought foorth the man childe.

14 And to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that shee might flee into the wildernesse into her

place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman: that he might cause her to bee caried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the Commaundements of God, and haue the testimony of Iesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 A beast riseth out of the sea with seuen heads and ten hornes, to whom the dragon giueth his power. 11 An other beast commeth vp out of the earth: 14 causeth an image to be made of the former beast, 15 and that men should worship it, 16 and receiue his marke.

AND I stood vpon the sand of the sea: and saw a beast rise vp out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes ten crownes, and vpon his heads, the ||name of blasphemie.

|| *Or, names.*

2 And the beast which I saw, was like vnto a Leopard, and his feet were as *the feet* of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lion: and the dragon gaue him his power, and his seat, and great authoritie.

3 And I saw one of his heads as it were †wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and al the world wondered after the beast.

† *Gr. slaine.*

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to make warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him to ||continue fortie and two moneths.

|| *Or, to make warre.*

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his Tabernacle, and them that dwelt in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to

ouercome them: And power was giuen him ouer all kinreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwel vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare:

10 Hee that leadeth into captiuitie, shall goe into captiuitie: *Hee that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

*Matth. 26. 52.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and hee had two hornes like a lambe, and hee spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And hee doeth great wonders, so that hee maketh fire come downe from heauen on the earth in the sight of men,

14 And deceiueth them that dwel on the earth, by the meanes of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an Image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did liue.

15 And he had power to giue †life vnto the Image of the beast, that the Image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not worship the Image of the beast, should be killed.

†*Gr. breath.*

16 And he causeth all, both smal and great, rich and poore, free and bond, †to receiue a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

†*Gr. to giue.*

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath vnderstanding, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is, sixe hundred threescore and sixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe standing on mount Sion with his company. 6 an Angel preacheth the Gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The haruest of the worlde, and putting in of the

sickle. 20 The vintage and winepresse of the wrath of God.

ANd I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundreth fourty and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the voice of many waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers, harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth and fourtie and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgines: These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoeuer hee goeth: These †were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lambe.

†*Gr. were bought.*

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another Angel flie in the midst of heauen, hauing the euerlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwel on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Feare God, and giue glory to him, for the houre of his iudgement is come: *and worshippe him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

*Psa. 146. 5 acts 14. 15.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, *Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great citie, because she made all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

*Esa. 21. 9. iere. 51. 8. chap. 18. 2.

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a lowd voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, which is powred out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and hee shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lambe:

11 And the smoke of their torment

ascendeth vp for euer and euer. And they haue no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receyueth the marke of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the Saints: Here are they that keepe the Commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, ||from hencefoorth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their workes doe follow them.

|| *Or, from henceforth saith the Spirit, yea.*

14 And I looked, and beholde, a white cloud, and vpon the cloude *one* sate like vnto the sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple crying with a loude voice to him that sate on the cloud: *Thrust in thy sickle and reape, for the time is come for thee to reape, for the haruest of the earth is ||ripe.

*Ioel 3. 13.

|| *Or, dryed.*

16 And hee that sate on the cloude thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another Angel came out of the Temple which is in heauen, he also hauing a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the Altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loud cry to him that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, & cast it into the great winepresse of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepresse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the winepresse, euen vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The seuen Angels with the seuen last plagues. 3 The song of thē that ouercome the beast. 7 The seuen vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heauen great and marueilous, seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues, for in them is filled vp the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a Sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victorie ouer the beast, and ouer his image, and ouer his marke, and ouer the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, hauing the harpes of God.

3 *And they sing the song of Moses the seruant of God, *Exo. 15. 1.
and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous
are thy workes, Lord God Almightie, *iust and true are thy *Psal. 145. 17.
wayes, thou king of saints.

4 *Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy *Iere. 10. 7.
Name? for thou onely art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy iudgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the Temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heauen was opened:

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, hauing the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and white linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto the seuen Angels, seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who liueth for euer and euer.

8 And the Temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The Angels powre out their Vials full of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ commeth as a thiefe. Blessed are they that watch.

ANd I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, and powre out the vials of the wrath of God vpō the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth, and there fell a noysome and grieuous sore vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing soule died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, & they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast iudged thus:

6 For they haue shedde the blood of Saints and Prophets, and thou hast giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Euen so, Lord God Almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall vpon the Sunne, and power was giuen vnto him to scorch men with fire.

|| *Or, burned*

9 And men were ||scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues: and they repented not, to giue him glory.

10 And the fift Angel powred out his viall vpon the seat of the beast, and his kingdome was full of darkenesse, and they gnawed their tongues for paine,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen, because of their paines, and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried vp, that the way of the Kings of the East might be prepared.

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs *come* out of the mouth of the dragon, & out of the mouth of the beast, & out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of deuils working miracles, which goe forth vnto the Kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

*Mat. 24. 44.

15 *Behold, I come as a thiefe. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, least hee walke naked, and they see his shame.

16 And hee gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrewe tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the ayre, and there came a great voyce out of the Temple of heauen, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices and thunders, and lightnings:

and there was a

great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great Citie was diuided into three parts, and the Cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, *to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath. *Ier. 25. 15.

20 And euery yland fled away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell vpon men a great haile out of heauen, euery stone about the weight of a talent, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the hayle: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3. 4 A woman arayed in purple and scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth vpon the Beast, 5 which is great Babylon the mother of all abominations. 9 The interpretation of the seuen heads, 12 and the tenne hornes. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lambe.

AND there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto mee, Come hither, I will shew vnto thee the iudgement of the great Whore, that sitteth vpon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth haue committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth haue beene made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caried me away in the Spirit into the wildernesse: and I saw a woman sit vpō a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and †decked with gold, and precious stone & pearles, hauing a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthinesse of her fornication. †*Gr. gilded.*

5 And vpon her forehead was a name written, *MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF ||HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.* || *Or, fornications.*

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the Saints, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the Angel saide vnto mee,

Wherefore didst thou marueile? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carieth her, which hath the seuen heads, and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the booke of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the mind which hath wisedome. The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seuen Kings, fiue are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, euen he is the eighth, & is of the seuen, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the tenne hornes which thou sawest, are ten kings, which haue receiued no kingdom as yet: but receiue power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their power and strength vnto the beast.

14 These shal make warre with the Lambe, and the Lambe shal ouercome them: *For he is Lord of Lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, & chosen, and faithfull.

*1. Tim. 6. 15. chap. 19. 16.

15 And he saith vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntil the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great Citie which reigneth ouer the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her. 9 The Kings of the earth, 11 with the Merchants and Mariners, lament ouer her. 20 The Saints reioyce for the iudgements of God vpon her.

ANd after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heauen, hauing great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cryed mightily with a strõg voyce, saying, *Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the hold of euery foule spirit, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird:

*Chap. 14. 8.

3 For all nations haue drunke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, & the Merchants of the earth are waxed rich thorow the ||abundance of her delicacies.

|| *Or, power.*

4 And I heard another voice from heauen, saying, Come out of her, my people, that yee be not partakers of her sinnes, and that yee receiue not of her plagues:

5 For her sinnes haue reached vnto heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her euen as shee rewarded you, and double vnto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much shee hath glorified her selfe, and liued deliciously, so much torment and sorrow giue her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a *Queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

*Esay. 47. 8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall bee vtterly burnt with fire, for strong is the Lord God, who iudgeth her.

9 And the Kings of the earth, who haue committed fornication, and liued deliciously with her, shall bewaile her and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning:

10 Standing afarre off for the feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mighty citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the Merchants of the earth shall weepe and mourne ouer her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

12 The merchandise of gold, and siluer, and pretious stones, and of pearles, and fine linnen, and purple, and silke, and scarlet, and all ||Thine wood, and all maner vessels of Yuorie, and all maner vessels of most precious wood, and of

|| *Or, sweet.*

of brasse, and iron, and marble,

13 And Cynamome, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, & wine, and oile, and fine floure, and wheat, and beasts, and sheepe, and horses, and chariots, and ||slaues, and soules of men.

|| *Or, bodies.*

14 And the fruits that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were daintie, and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The Merchants of these things which were made riche by her, shall stand afarre off for the feare of her torment, weeping and wailing.

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linnen, and purple and scarlet, and decked with gold, and pretious stones, and pearles:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And euery shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood a farre off,

18 And cryed when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like vnto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping, and wailing, saying, Alas alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets, for God hath auenged you on her.

21 And a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great milstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great citie Babylon bee throwen downe, and shall bee found no more at all.

22 And the voyce of harpers and musitions, and of pipers, and trumpetters, shall bee heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoeuer craft hee be, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a milstone shalbe heard no more at all in thee:

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voice of the bridegrome and of the bride shalbe heard no more at all in thee: for thy Merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceiued.

24 And in her was found the blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God is praised in heauen for iudging the great whore, and auenging the blood of his Saints. 7 The marriage of the Lambe. 20 The Angel will not be worshipped. 17 The foules called to the great slaughter.

AND after these things I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: saluation, and glorie, and honour, and power vnto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his iudgements, for hee hath iudged the great whore which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants at her hand.

3 And againe they sayd, Alleluia: and her smoke rose vp for euer & euer.

4 And the foure and twentie Elders, and the foure beasts fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God all yee his seruants, and ye that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mightie thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let vs bee glad and reioyce, and giue honour to him: for the mariage of the Lambe is come, and his wife hath made herselfe readie.

8 And to her was granted, that she should bee arayed in fine linnen, cleane and white: for the fine linnen is the righteousnesse of Saints.

9 And hee saith vnto mee, Write, *Blessed are they which are called vnto the marriage supper of the Lambe. And he saith vnto mee, These are the true sayings of God. *Mat. 22. 2.

10 And I fell at his feete to worship him: And he said vnto me, *See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren, that haue the testimonie of Iesus, Worship God: for the testimony of Iesus, is the spirit of prophecie. *Cha. 22. 9.

11 And I sawe heauen opened, and behold a white horse, and hee that sate vpon him was called faithful and true, and in righteousnes hee doth iudge and make warre.

12 His eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes, and hee had a name written, that no man knew but he himselfe.

*Esa. 63. 2.

13 *And hee was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heauen followed him vpon white horses, clothed in fine linnen, white and cleane.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe sword, that with it hee should smite the nations: and he shal rule them with a rod of yron: and he treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almighty God.

*Chap. 17. 14.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.*

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the Sunne, and hee cried with a lowd voyce, saying to all the foules that flie in the midst of heauen, Come and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God:

18 That yee may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of Captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, & the Kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make warre against him that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 And the beast was taken, & with him the false prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceiued them that had receiued the marke of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast aliue into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sate vpon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: aud all the foules were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeeres. 6 The first resurrection: they blessed that haue part therein. 7 Satan let loose againe. 8 Gog and Magog. 10 The deuill cast into the lake of fire and brimstone. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

ANd I saw an Angel come down from heauen, hauing the key of the bottomles pit, & a great chaine in his hand.

2 And hee laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeres,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp, and set a seale vpon him, that he should deceiue the nations no more, till the thousand yeeres should bee fulfilled: and after that hee must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them: & I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had receiued his marke vpon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they liued and reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead liued not againe vntill the thousand yeeres were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed & holy is he that hath part in yͤ first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be Priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeeres.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth, *Gog & Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

*Ezech. 38. 2. and 39. 1.

9 And they went vp on the breadh of the earth, and compassed the campe of the Saints about, and the beloued citie: and fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuil that deceiued them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night, for euer and euer.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on it, from whose face the earth and the heauen fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I sawe the dead, small and great, stand before God: and the books were opened: & an other *booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life: and the dead were iudged out of

*Chap. 3. 5.

those things
which

which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gaue vp the dead which were in it: and
|| *Or, hell.* death and ||hell deliuered vp the dead which were in them:
and they were iudged euery man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A newe heauen and a newe earth. 10 The heauenly Ierusalem, with a full description thereof. 23 She needeth no sunne, the glory of God is her light. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches vnto her.

*Esa. 65. 17 ANd *I saw a new heauen, and a new earth: for the first
2. pet. 3. 13 heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there
was no more sea.

2 And I Iohn saw the holy City, new Hierusalem comming down from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he wil dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shalbe with them, *and be* their God.

*Cha. 7. 17 4 *And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes:
and there shall bee no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there bee any more paine: for the former things are passed away.

*2. Cor. 5. 17. 5 And he that sate vpon the throne, said, *Behold, I make
all things new. And hee said vnto me, Write: for these words are true and faithfull.

*Chap. 1. 8. and 22. 13. 6 And he said vnto mee, It is done: *I am Alpha and
Omega, the beginning and the end. *I will giue vnto him
*Esa. 55. 1. that is athirst, of the fountaine of the water of life, freely.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherite all things, and I will bee his God, and he shall be my sonne.

8 But the feareful, and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all lyars, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountaine, and shewed me that great citie, the holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her light *was* like vnto a stone most precious; euen like a iasper stone, cleare as christal,

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, & names written thereon, which are *the names* of the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East three gates, on the North three gates, on the South three gates, and on the West three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the names of the twelue Apostles of the Lambe.

15 And hee that talked with mee, had a golden reede to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelue thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred, and fourtie, and foure cubites, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper, and the city was pure gold, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all maner of precious stones. The first foundation was Iasper, the second Saphir, the third a Chalcedony, the fourth an Emerald,

20 The fift Sardonix, the sixt Sardius, the seuenth Chrysolite, the eight Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chrysoprasus, the eleuenth a Iacinct, the twelfth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, euery seuerall gate was of one pearle, and the streete of the city was pure golde, as it were transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein:

For the Lord God Almightie, and the Lambe, are the Temple of it.

*Esai. 60. 19. 23 *And the citie had no need of the Sunne, neither of the Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

*Esai. 60. 3. 24 *And the nations of them which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth doe bring their glory and honour into it.

*Esai. 60. 11. 25 *And the gates of it shall not bee shut at all by day: for there shall bee no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glorie and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lie: but they which are written in the Lambes booke of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of the water of life. 2 The tree of life. 5 The light of the Citie of God is himselfe. 9 The Angel will not be worshipped. 18 Nothing may bee added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

AND he shewed mee a pure riuer of water of life, cleere as Chrystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middest of the street of it, and of either side of the riuer, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelue manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, & of the Lambe shall bee in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

*Chap. 21. 23. 5 *And there shalbe no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sunne, for the Lorde God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euer and euer.

6 And hee said vnto mee, These sayings *are* faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Beholde, I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And I Iohn saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seene, I fell downe, to worship before the feet of the Angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he vnto me, *See thou doe it not: for I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke: worship God.

*Chap. 19. 10.

10 And hee saith vnto mee, Seale not the sayings of the prophesie of this booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniust, let him be vniust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and hee that is righteous, let him bee righteous still: and hee that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with mee, *to giue euery man according as his worke shall be.

*Rom. 2. 6.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, *the beginning and the end, the first & the last.

*Esa. 41. 4. and 44. 6.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandements, that they may haue right to the tree of life, and may enter in thorow the gates into the citie.

15 For without *are* dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth and maketh a lie.

16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you these things in the Churches. I am the roote and the offspring of Dauid, and the bright and morning starre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. *And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoeuer will, let him take the water of life freely.

*Esa. 55. 1.

18 For I testifie vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the prophesie of this booke, *If any man shal adde vnto these things, God shall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke.

*Deut. 4. 2. prou. 30. 6.

19 And if any man shall take away from the wordes of the booke of this prophesie, God shal take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy citie, and from the things which are written in this booke.

20 Hee which testifieth these things, saith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen so, Come Lord Iesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

Cambridge:
PRINTED BY JOHN CLAY, M.A.
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.